

**THROUGH DEEP DEFILES
TO TIBETAN UPLANDS**

The Kelley-Roosevelt Expedition, whose sphere of activity included Indo-China, in the interest of the Field Museum of Natural History, Chicago, U.S.A., was made possible through the generosity of a Trustee, the late Mr William V. Kelley, a benefactor to science in his public-spirited and practical aid towards a Museum, unsurpassed in its method of exhibition. To the President, Mr Stanley Field, and the Director, Mr Stephen C. Simms, thereof, an appreciation is tendered by the Author.



SURMOUNTING THE RISE OUT OF THE YANGPI GORGE
"FOOT BY FOOT, THE MULES GAINED ON GROUND THAT ROSE
ALMOST SHEER"

(Frontispiece)

(Chapter I. P. 31)

THROUGH DEEP DEFILES TO TIBETAN UPLANDS

*THE TRAVELS OF A NATURALIST FROM
THE IRRAWADDY TO THE YANGTSE*

By

HERBERT STEVENS

FELLOW OF THE ZOOLOGICAL SOCIETY OF LONDON, FELLOW OF THE ROYAL
GEOGRAPHICAL SOCIETY, MEMBER OF THE BRITISH ORNITHOLOGISTS' UNION,
MEMBER OF THE SOCIETY FOR THE PRESERVATION OF THE FAUNA OF THE
EMPIRE.

*WITH PLATES
AND A MAP*

LONDON

H. F. & G. WITHERBY

326 HIGH HOLBORN, W.C.1



First Published 1934

*Printed for Messrs. H. F. & G. Witherby
by the Library Press, Lowestoft*

INTRODUCTION

No region on the face of the earth could have a greater appeal to the traveller's imagination than the savage stretch of country that extends from the uncertain, if arbitrary demarcation, on the North-east frontier of Assam and Burma to the Tibetan Borderland. Apart from the terrain, contiguous to the respective trade-routes, corresponding to the trend of the valleys, north and south, large areas of this country remain in mysterious isolation, untrodden and unknown.

Responsible for our lack of knowledge are the marvellous configuration of the land and paucity of cross-routes; the hostility of the frontier tribes and unsettled conditions beyond; the difficulties attendant on a journey through a country deluged during the South-west Monsoon by torrential rain, followed by a period of clear skies that often portend a drought: moreover, at times, the passes are impassable blocked with snow; and, of more consequence, the impoverished state of a country that supports only the limited few, once past the populated tracts of cultivation.

From Sadiya, the farthest outpost in Assam, *as the crow flies*, Tachienlu,¹ the main emporium of commerce between China and Tibet, is some 400 miles,² or 500 miles³ distant, north-east of Bhamo in Burma.

¹ Or Tatsienlu, pronounced Dachienlu.

² This journey has been once accomplished from east to west by Captain, now Lt.-Colonel F. M. Bailey, in 1911; whereas Mr T. T. Cooper had made the attempt, in the reverse direction in 1870, but was frustrated in the Mishmi Hills.

³ Colonel T. Roosevelt, Messrs K. Roosevelt, C. S. Cutting, with their Chinese interpreter, Mr J. T. Young, occupied 55 days in actual travel for the 908 miles* traversed; while, likewise, it took me 65 days, of which three days were short stages for a similar route with diversions.

* *Trailing the Giant Panda*. Theodore Roosevelt and Kermit Roosevelt. (Charles Scribner's Sons 1929.)

Fortunate and undeterred, a few travellers have traversed that rugged region of alternating, lofty, snow-clad ranges, and fertile valleys, beyond further India—the comprehensive and most intricate complex of all mountain and river systems. Where the upper waters of several, great rivers, separated by only thirty, or even, twenty miles, running neck to neck for hundreds of miles at a stretch, have scoured from time immemorial a course through canyons of stupendous depth—to reach the sea, some thousands of miles apart. This is the country, intersected by the Irrawaddy, the Salween, the Mekong, and the Yangtse, on their descent from the plateau of Tibet—the roof of the world.

Fewer still have ventured beyond, into ‘the Land of the Lamas’,¹—a land, which today remains, in its natural people, steeped in superstition, bound to ancient customs, and isolated from the outer world, as it ever was in a past age.

Impressed by the remarkable journey² of Prince Henri d’Orleans and his two companions, longingly I cast eyes, now some years back, on this rampart of the Himalaya when tending the beneficial camellia, converted to the bush, the leaf of which in Upper Assam, in the tea-taster’s vocabulary, yields a ‘full pungent liquor’,—little thinking what the future had in store.

Thus, when I was invited to join the Kelley-Roosevelt Expedition to Yunnan and Szechwan, the two largest provinces in China; this fortuitous circumstance was welcomed as another milestone in an eventful life. It was again the alluring call of the East. Where others had to hurry—I should have to tarry.

Mr R. F., now Sir Reginald Johnston, in 1906, travelling light, in the reverse direction spent 52 days solely on the march for the same journey* by the most direct route.

¹ Appropriately designated by Du Halde in his treatise on China 1735. English translations 1738 and 1741.

² *From Tonkin to India*, January 1895-January 1896. (Methuen 1898).

* *From Peking to Mandalay*. R. F. Johnston (John Murray 1908).

CONTENTS

CHAP.		PAGE
	INTRODUCTION - - - - -	5
I	ACROSS THE GREAT DIVIDES - - - - -	II
II	ALONG THE YANGTSE BIG BEND - - - - -	39
III	THROUGH THE LAND OF THE LAMAS - - - - -	57
IV	INTO THE REGION OF THE PERPETUAL SNOWS - - - - -	89
V	IN AND AROUND TACHIENLU - - - - -	122
VI	ON THE TIBETAN UPLANDS - - - - -	134
VII	WITHIN THE HEART OF MUPING - - - - -	173
VIII	OVER THE RAPIDS OF THE YA AND DOWN THE MIN AND YANGTSE - - - - -	212
	CONCLUSION - - - - -	229
	ITINERARY - - - - -	233
	INDEX - - - - -	239

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

PLATES

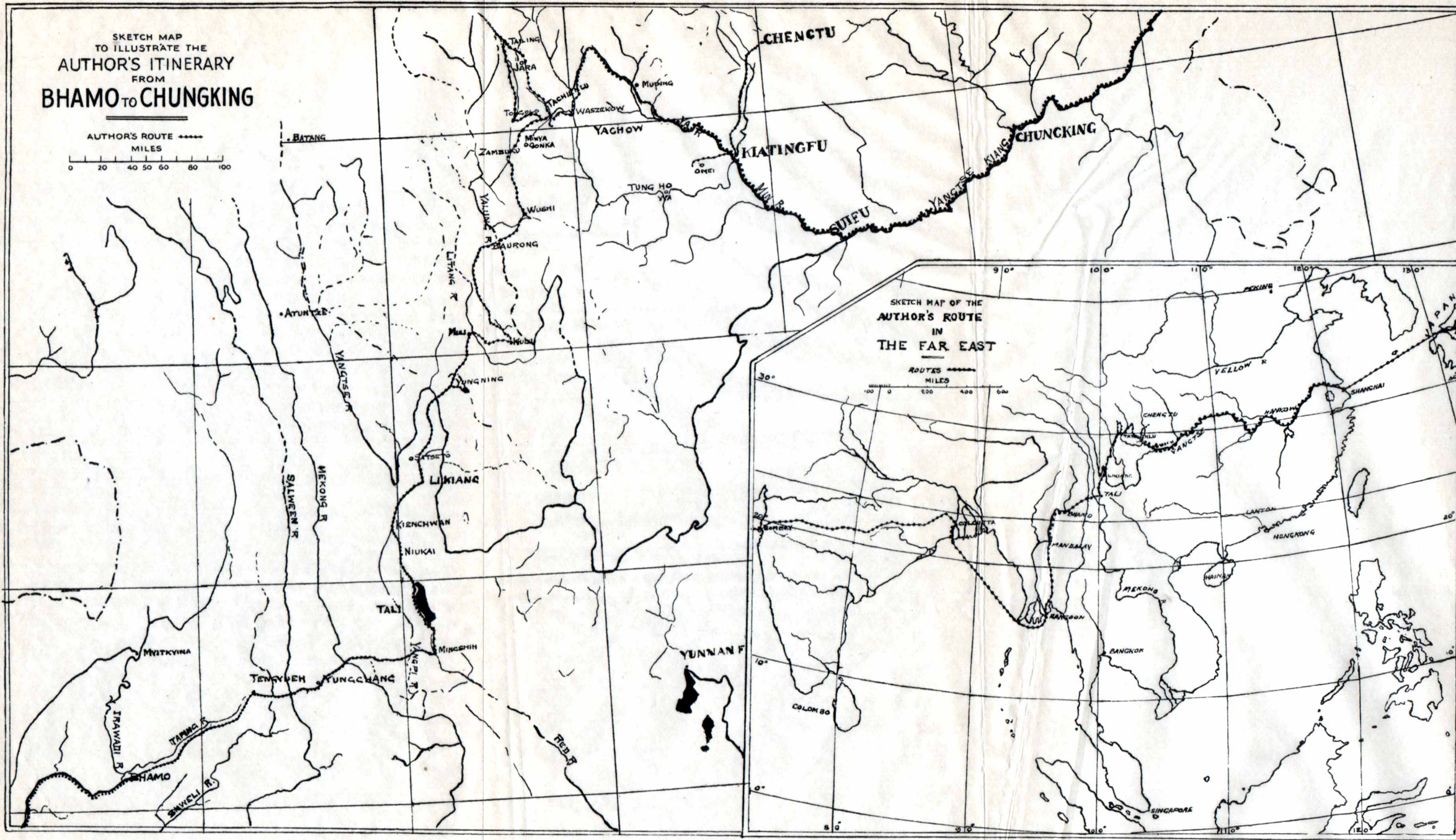
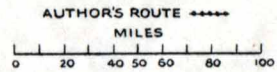
SURMOUNTING THE RISE OUT OF THE YANGPI GORGE. " FOOT BY FOOT, THE MULES GAINED ON GROUND THAT ROSE ALMOST SHEER . . . "	<i>Frontispiece</i>
" A CONVENIENT METHOD IS PRACTISED THROUGHOUT YUNNAN, ALLOWING THE WHOLE WEIGHT TO BE LIFTED COLLECTIVELY " - - - - -	<i>Facing page 25</i>
" IT WAS A CURIOUSLY MIXED, LIGHT, IF BULKY, LOAD THAT LEFT BY THE PACK-PONY FROM LIKIANG " - -	" " 25
" THUS WERE THE TYPES IN OCCUPATION OF THE MARKET- PLACE " - - - - -	" " 56
" HIS DAUGHTER LEADS THE HARDY, LITTLE BULLOCKS AS THE RUDE, IRON SHARE IS GUIDED, SCRAPING A SHALLOW FURROW, WHERE MUCH IS LEFT TO CHANCE " -	" " 56
" CONSPICUOUS IN THE REAR OF A TRAIN OF PACK-ANIMALS WERE MY CLEAN-PLANED BOXES ON THE BACK OF THE CARRIERS " - - - - -	" " 88
" WE WOULD CAMP EITHER IN THE FOREST . . . BUT RECOGNIZED BY NAME TO THE MULETEERS " -	" " 88
" THE SLOPES OF THE SNOW MOUNTAIN SATSETO—THE SOUTHERNMOST SNOW MOUNTAIN ON THE CONTINENT OF ASIA " - - - - -	" " 121
" THE TRAIL RAN PARALLEL TO THE MOUNTAIN-MASS TO AFFORD A PANORAMIC VIEW " - - - - -	" " 121
" AT EVERY UNDULATION WOULD APPEAR VALLEY . . . AND RIDGE . . . UNLESS BLOCKED TO VIEW BY THE FORESTED SLOPES OF SOME PROTRUDING EMINENCE " -	" " 172
" RHODODENDRON IN BLOOM . . . ADORNED THE FORE- GROUND, HEIGHTENED BY THE DARK GREEN FOLIAGE OF THE PINES " - - - - -	" " 172
" TOWERING LIKE A CATHEDRAL SPIRE, A PINNACLE OF ROCK " - - - - -	" " 194
PLAN OF THE SACRED MT OMEISHAN (OMISAN) - - - - -	" " 220

MAP

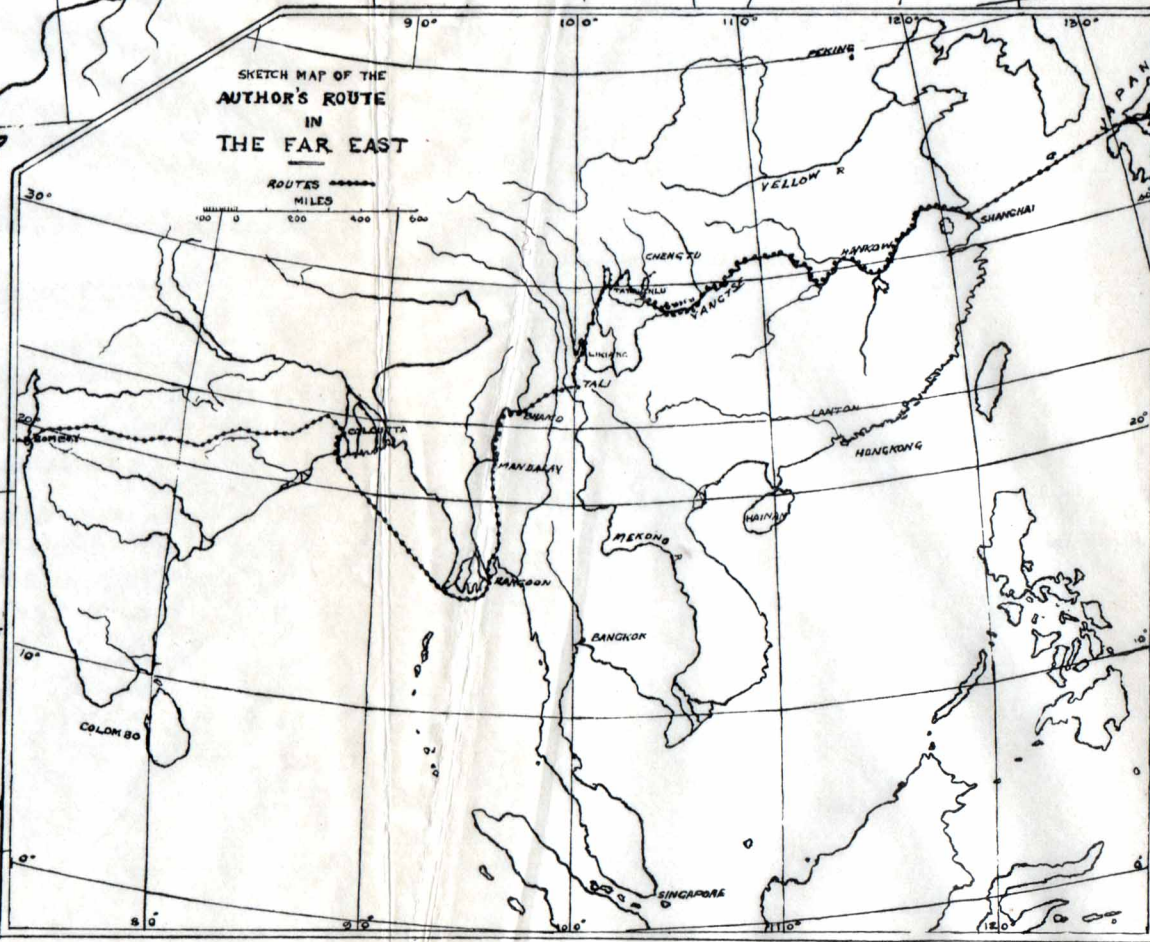
MAP OF AUTHOR'S ROUTE - - - - -	<i>Facing page 11</i>
---------------------------------	-----------------------

TO
MY WIFE

SKETCH MAP
TO ILLUSTRATE THE
AUTHOR'S ITINERARY
FROM
BHAMO TO CHUNGKING



SKETCH MAP OF THE
AUTHOR'S ROUTE
IN
THE FAR EAST



CHAPTER I

ACROSS THE GREAT DIVIDES

HENCE it came about that we two, Jack and I, the van of our party, had left the thriving port of Rangoon, with its arresting Shwe Dagon Pagoda of golden minaret, and peal of tinkling sweetness, wafted on the gentle breeze ; we were on the road to Mandalay, should our present, comfortable mode of travel even be devoid of all romance. In the tropics, dawn is but brief ; numbers of gaily coloured, graceful bee-eaters¹, and brilliant, stumpy kingfishers,² perched on the neighbouring telegraph-wires, shook free from repose, made haste to move with the increasing light, as the golden orb rose in all his splendour. Clumps of coconut palms seemed oddly out of place, so far established beyond the sea-coast, if indigenous inland elsewhere. Pagodas were almost as numerous as the clusters of euphorbia or spurge.

Our arrival at the rail-head gave the involuntary signal to Kashmiri servants to put in an appearance. Bullock-carts were engaged for transport to the wharf : rifles, shot-guns, camp-equipment, stores (only to be used in an emergency), traps and collecting material—packed in the lightest of cases, compatible with strength, of suitable size and weight for mule transport or coolie portorage—exclusive of miscellaneous, loose paraphernalia, comprising hand-lamps and cooking utensils ; for which eventually a place would have to be found. Once the numerous loads were safely stowed on the trim, spick-and-span, paddle-wheel steamboat, timed to leave at daybreak on the following morning for Bhamo through the Defiles of the Irrawaddy, we had ample leisure to view the spacious, vacant Palace of King Thibaw and

¹ *Merops erythrocephalus erythrocephalus* (Gmel.).

² *Halcyon smyrnensis fusca* (Bodd.). *Alcedo atthis bengalensis* Gmel.

'his wives,' whose massive, teak pillars remain as sound as when erected, and 'the thousand and one pagodas'.

Palm-swifts¹ enlivened the sultry lassitude of an Eastern evening, by arrowy flight, twisting and darting, to rest for a momentary pause under the extensive, fan-shaped leaves in the compounds at Katha. A troop of macaques, the Himalayan monkey,² had been observed on the right bank within the Second Defile, while, a short distance from our destination, two jackals,³ stealthily approaching, came down to drink on the left bank, which, besides the lengthy bamboo-rafts and luxuriant vegetation throughout this scenic reach of the river, afforded me many moments of subdued excitement.

At Bhamo, with the arrival of Theodore Roosevelt, Kermit Roosevelt, and Suydam Cutting, our party was again united.

After an examination of the mules, the completion of numerous finalities, and Christmas festivities, now over; what was to be my last contact with the irksome demand of conventionalism was severed for months when the efficient, if badly abused, 'Ford' came to a halt at a hamlet, seventeen miles, north-east. Interesting as it was throughout this stretch of primeval forest; from a hurried survey little had been expected, and fortune favoured when a barking-deer⁴ skipped across the road, truly described—the last for many a happy, long day!

To assist the muleteers as much baggage as each car could hold had been brought. As a commencement, Theodore Roosevelt obtained a male White-breasted Pygmy-falcon,⁵ restricted in discontinuous distribution, the main item of interest in a number of birds, collected. Comfortable quarters for the night were obtained in a flimsy outhouse on the upper floor of bamboo-matting, spread with rice-straw, despite the intermittent grunting underneath.

¹ *Collocalia fuciphaga brevirostris* (McClell.).

² *Macaca assamensis* McClell. Dr Anderson, to whom the credit is due for identifying McClelland's species, obtained a female specimen on the right bank of the Irrawaddy, about 20-25 miles below Bhamo, which must have reference to this same locality where, no doubt, they have long been firmly established.

³ *Canis indicus* Hodgs.

⁴ *Muntiacus muntjak vaginalis* Bodd.

⁵ Separated from the Sikkim Falconet as *Microhierax caerulescens burmanicus* Swann. Whereas *Microhierax melanoleucus melanoleucus* (Blyth) is endemic to Assam.

The trail¹ tunnelled through the dense forest, wound up and down and around hills, choked with evergreen vegetation, through which the single telegraph-line could, at intervals, be seen ignoring the gullies in its directness. In patches, the mud was deep enough to tax the strength of the strongest mule. Approaching caravans disputed the right of way at awkward bends, but a halt by one or the other, leading, bell-bedecked mule, in response to a muleteer's curses, prevented many a tangle.

It was not a good omen to overtake at each, successive stage half a dozen, murmuring Chinese, cheerfully labouring under the weight of a substantial coffin, whose decomposing inmate had been our silent traveller on the river; where above, a forlorn cock insecurely sat, intended to keep the soul of the deceased from awakening, yet it might seem to serve a contradictory purpose. It was to be observed, however, this sentinel never corresponded to that of the previous day, his predecessor perhaps having succumbed to a more utilitarian purpose. Neither did the distant crack of desultory rifle fire inspire confidence—admittedly the Kachins were out of hand!

Descending to the trail after a fruitless but invigorating chase of a group of long-tailed langurs,² which gave us an insight into the steepness of the ground and density of vegetation, Kermit Roosevelt and I, on rounding a corner, encountered a Kachin who, having come out of retirement, evidently not anticipating further members of our party to be so far behind, momentarily assumed an attitude of defence by bringing his rifle to the shoulder. Frustrated by our apparent indifference, he recovered his equilibrium with the best possible grace—an impetuous impulse which probably had its foundation in a guilty conscience, suspicious of an ever-to-be-feared retaliation.

The loud, resonant *hoo-oo*, almost like the human voice, from a party of hoolocks,³ tailless apes, black with white eyebrow-band, acting in concert, ushered in the start of another

¹ As this term occurs with frequency, to avoid misconception it is used in a wide sense, and covers anything from a broad bridle-path to a hunter's track.

² *Pithecus melamerus* Ell. Type Locality, Bhamo (Fea).

³ *Hylobates hoolock* (Harl.).

day's march, though too far off to be located in the density of the tallest trees.

All were physically fit, but it was too early yet to expect, however much desired, that hard-as-nails' pitch of muscular, leg development. A half-conscious sigh produced a cheery request for my thoughts—I failed to confess: "It's a long way to Tipperary!"

Nothing of much significance had been collected until Suydam Cutting secured a topotypical specimen of a Red-bellied Squirrel¹ in heavy forest, some thirty-seven miles north-east of Bhamo. Once the Chinese frontier was reached, the dangers of the trail, demolished by landslides and barricaded with fallen trees and brushwood, overlooking the Taping river, were relegated to the past. No official was visible at the outpost to question our right of entry. Frequented by sunbirds and minivets, the pink blossom of the cherry, with the trees grouped in small clusters, presented an animated scene of movement and colour.

At nightfall, the wailing monotone, *graoh*, from vast flights of crane overhead returning to their winter quarters, reached us on the march, to fade imperceptibly into the sublime stillness under a starlit canopy.

The surface of the trail, bad enough before, became worse in its pot-holes and roughly laid cobbles—a transition too obvious!

No one needs look for anything better than a roof over one's head in a Chinese caravansary. Our first night's halt in the Land of the Celestial gave us a first intimation in the deficit of comfort and excess of noise and filth. Boisterous muleteers, yelping dogs, combine with the humble members of the farmyard to create a pandemonium. However, as time assuages discomfort, so would familiarity breed contempt, and uninterrupted sleep eventually ensues through sheer fatigue. Alas! often cut short by an early resumption of discord, significant of approaching daylight.

All alike were imbued with the true bond of comradeship: Theodore Roosevelt took the same keen interest in setting a rat-trap as Kermit Roosevelt did in preparing the specimen caught. Suydam Cutting attended to the innumerable details

¹ *Callosciurus erythraeus gordonii* And.

requiring attention that are essential to success. Jack Young assisted me in my duties.

Early-risen villagers, engaged in harvesting the rice crop, were everywhere scattered over the flat, open, highly cultivated valley. Carefully swept ground, set apart for piles of unhusked *padi*, with stacks of straw, dotted over the landscape, lent hue to the industry of its inhabitants, through which meandered the same river, our babbling, on-coming wayfarer of preceding days. The surrounding hills were improvidently bare, the result of a prolonged and systematic deforestation. The ubiquitous bamboo-clump denoted a house or settlement. Cakes of cow-dung, plastered at random on every house and left to dry by natural heat, were significant of a shortage of wood-fuel, while to hand in an emergency; in this respect, we might have already reached the Tibetan wilds. Sauntering under the liberal shade of several peepul, rather indiarubber¹ trees, with bulbous roots, a lone sentry in obscure attire, and mute of speech, patrolled his beat with the minimum of exertion. Mud walls, often further increased in height to give additional protection, overgrown with spiky euphorbia, encircled the larger villages.

Hereabouts numbers of trails diverged. After my first experience, I learned to give outlying villages a wide berth, as once within, it seemed a maze. Having paid more attention to the birds than to our caravan, footsore (a minor but troublesome misfortune, actually repeated nine months later, after twelve hundred miles had been covered on foot), under a broiling sun, and the trail lost, I reached the entrance to a Shan village. At my request, water was eventually forthcoming to replace the spirits, considerately proffered. Requiring kind services, I was prepared to follow one of the villagers, on the off-chance to escape from my plight. After traversing for some distance the narrow ridges that intersected the plots of cultivation, my guide turned sharply through the confined alley in yet another village when, suddenly appeared, two, local irregulars with rifle and bandolier, to block my way. A rapid glance at me, and they, as suddenly, disappeared. Here was an interesting predicament; when, to my blank astonishment, I was hailed by an unseen person in English! On entering the court-yard, a pair of bar-headed

¹ Probably *Ficus infectoria*.

geese¹ and a brahminy-duck² were visible. Whoever it was that beckoned me, at least, we had mutual interests.

A young man, Chinese, in partial attire arose, offering me a hearty welcome. Water, to wash and also cleanse my feet, and food had been provided, when information was supplied by a villager that a party of foreign travellers was encamped in the distance. It was now well past noon. With the aid of my binocular, I made them out to be my companions. A 'short cut' across the *padi*-fields brought us to the vaguely defined trail; and, on the arrival of Theodore Roosevelt and Suydam Cutting, I introduced my good Samaritan: Mr Philip Tao, the brother of the local magistrate, the Saw Bwa of Kanai. Tao had not ventured far afield; spontaneously and quaintly, his aphorism: "Why spend much money to get very tired?" amused me in its opportune conciseness. This misadventure delayed Kermit Roosevelt and Jack Young, who promptly had returned in search of me, whereas I had overshot their midday halt. Owing to low water in the river on which Tao had intended to have the four of us poled by raft, we had, perforce, to resume a wearisome tramp which lasted well into the night; and our benefactor, conversant with the district as he was, found himself in difficulties when the time came to traverse the swampy rice-fields, unaccustomed to our pace.

Complimentary in return, Tao invited us to breakfast at Old Kanai, New Year's Day; when empty stomachs, chafing at the prolonged delay, were ill requited by the fiery spirit; but they were compensated by frequent helpings from the glowingly heated mess of pottage that contained many surprises, like the bran-tub of childhood; though not always so palatable when a rooster's 'talons' or a duck's beak popped up, additionally to the grubs³, an obscure delicacy, which appeared with exasperating frequency.

Bidding farewell to our kind host, associated with agreeable pleasantries, where surrounded by a varied display of tree and shrub in the compound, a number of pinioned, aquatic captives were equally at home in the artificial ponds, within recent,

¹ *Anser indicus* (Lath.).

² *Casarca ferruginea* (Pall.).

³ *Cordiceps sinensis*, a caterpillar infested with a Mycelium or Fungus growth and, apart from its supposedly medicinal properties, often served in a stew of pork as a relish.

troubled times used as a refuge for precious articles of vertu : the quicksands in the ever-changing bed of the river were fortunately avoided, and we promptly caught up our armed escort who had preceded us. Whenever conveniently situated, we commandeered the porch or dust-begrimed altar-room of a temple with its grotesque gods, and sacrifices of joss-sticks, stuck in front of the deities, like so many wax tapers. Always, these temples were in an advanced state of decay and unattended ; and, if relics of an immaterial past, now served both muleteer and mule for a material present.

It was not without a qualm when I accepted Jack's invitation to sample the insipid rice-jelly and various sweetmeats to hand on wayside booths.

An ancient, triumphal arch, in proof of a former affluence, loomed in the distance, and before long we were clattering through the narrow, cobbled street of a straggling town (Nantien) ; over flagstones, hollowed out by the feet of myriads, departed on the greatest adventure of all, and by those awaiting in mortal coil. Women with bound, diminutive feet, hobbled along on their heels ; so severely handicapped, the incongruity of this ancient custom seemed particularly senseless to us. Both sexes in dress adhered to a uniformity of blue ; so far as it concerned the male sex, reminiscent of Clyde skilled artisans in clean dungarees on a Monday morning 6 a.m. in more prosperous times. Skeletons and carcasses of mules and cattle littered the ground beyond the gate through which we had emerged, where listless, mangy dogs snarled but seldom fought for the choicest bits of decomposed flesh and garbage. On the morning of the ninth day out, the tombs of a quota of 'China's defunct millions', crowding the hill-sides, foretold our close-at-hand completion of the first stage of my adventure ; and, on circumventing the hill, the town of Tengyueh, nestling in the plain, lay at our feet.

To travel light, provided the sole consideration is to 'get through' with the least embarrassment, is ideal ; but to collect zoological and botanical specimens necessitates a certain amount of *impedimenta*, and, further, requires indefinite time. In accordance with a prearrangement to divide our caravan, my Kashmiri servant, Aziza, and I, with fifteen mules and ponies, left a day later than my companions, whom we were to rejoin at Tachienlu. Taking leave of my hospitable fellow

countryman, Mr H. M. Wilkinson, who had given me every assistance; on traversing the cultivated plain, sprightly hoopoes,¹ with crest depressed, reluctantly rose at our approach; while kites² manœuvred above, with an ever-changing, rudder movement of the tail yet almost motionless wings, to emit at long intervals an occasional, querulous *cheel*.

After a sharp rise there followed undulating hills, through which our ragged caravan slowly progressed, affording impressive glimpses between the clouds of snow-capped peaks to the north-east; whereas, to the south, an endless array of hills and valleys was lost to view in the distant haze. On passing through a hamlet, a party of the Yunnan Greenfinch³ was visible amongst the foliage of surrounding trees, pecking at the pine-cones. An equally sharp descent, and we had reached at sunset Kanlanchai. Soon hungry mules were relieved of vexatious loads. Before the bamboo muzzles had been removed, the slimy, cobbled courtyard was the scene of many a frantic effort to reach the bucket of water in each of which two or three handfuls of meal had been stirred. Several rolled to gain relief from itchy backs. Braying and kicking, eventually they quieted down to crunch the meagre supply of flinty beans within the nosebags. Tired muleteers squatted around a none-too-lively fire; for once the busy plying of chopsticks and rice-stodged mouths retarded conversation. At last! Aziza got *his* fire alight and with my frugal meal, over, the shutter closed and bedding spread on the boards, I retired to rest in the frowsy room abutting on the inclined, narrow street. The good lady of the hostel seemed unnecessarily amused next morning at our departure; neither Aziza nor I had the remotest idea, why. With no knowledge of the language, having paid all charges, the somewhat diminutive fowl inclusive, we left.

The terraced slopes of rice cultivation became prominent, and later the Shweli was crossed by an efficient suspension-bridge. By midday, the attained height compensated for the short distance traversed, yet this stage was not to be accomplished until 3,000 feet of an abrupt-rising, execrable trail was overcome. My snack of food, eaten; with no sign from the muleteers in readiness to move, I trudged

¹ *Upupa epops saturata*, Lönnb. ² *Milvus migrans lineatus* (Gray).

³ *Carduelis ambiguus* Oust.

on, arriving at a hamlet (Taipingpu of Davies) 8,000 feet in altitude on the divide, wet with sweat. A chilling wind blew: the tardy arrival of the caravan had increased my discomfort. Offered room within the house, my choice lay outside when my stretcher was placed alongside the mules in spite of the prevailing low temperature. Necessity stifles scruples in regard to food and conveniences! While conditions are tolerable during the cold season, once the hot weather arrives the verminous state of most houses renders a sojourn, however brief, fraught with much inconvenience and danger.

Somebody, a muleteer of an earlier out-going caravan, considered he was more in need of my umbrella than myself, thus, early disappeared, a cheap but useful article. The ground was hard with frost, and the morning mist had not lifted as the mules filed out through the dilapidated gate. Drove of young pigs blocked the way at our descent, scattering into the forest, much to the anxiety of the drovers, however carefully avoided, when some recrimination was evident by jeer or scowl. Another sharp ascent, and we were traversing the razor-edge of a projecting spur; disclosing views of perpendicular rocky slopes, converging at all angles into the abyss, yet wherever a tree or shrub could find a foothold or sufficiency of soil, there it stood. The prospect was terrifying in its grandeur.

The climb ahead for a further group of corpse-bearers, now resting at the foot of the divide, would prove a severe test of endurance, and it would have excused them for wishing their departed friend in Hades, in the inanimate body, if not the spirit. Our muleteers on regaining partially level ground pushed on ahead, with the result that both of us lost the trail, owing to *my* curiosity to see how near we could approach *without guns* a small herd of cranes,¹ resulting in our having to retrace our steps, more than once to the village, recently vacated. By this we obtained no advantage, finally deciding to strike a course of our own where it was considered the bridge was most likely to span the river.

Leading our ponies over declivitous ground and through brushwood, eventually the suspension-bridge came in view. No sign of the noon halting-place and our caravan, I finished my emergency ration, a bar of chocolate, to await events.

¹ *Antigone antigone antigone* (L.).

The caravan could scarcely have proceeded beyond, as the trail was now visible for a long way ahead. It was with some misgiving when we complied with the request of a voluble youth, in purport, that our muleteers had actually crossed the river. Cliques of gamblers monopolized the narrow thoroughfare of the village. Mounting the stone steps, the clear, rumbling Salween became less audible, and, after some few miles of an arid stretch, supporting a peculiar vegetation of spiky-thorned shrubs, we arrived at a bamboo hut, recently erected. As expected, our caravan had not arrived! The ruse to get us on ahead had succeeded, there was no object to be gained in going on. Evidently the mules and ponies were in a similar frame of disposition, as on their late arrival spontaneously they came to a halt to await their masters, further delayed by the attraction to gamble.

The owner must have been apprehensive for his personal protection, judging by two articles of civilized life: a mosquito-net and an automatic pistol, which hung in his sleeping quarters. The one, a necessary adjunct to a healthy existence in these malarious valleys; while the other seemed superfluous without one myself, but only time could tell. The ground had not had time to get fouled, so I found cleanness in the thatched-roof extension amongst the straw, which was shared by Aziza, two youths, and a pig, boxed in the corner. My pony having been attended to, I turned in, satisfied with progress. I made out the altitude of this place to be only two thousand nine hundred feet.

The following day we had an undulating trail, with an ascent of nearly three thousand feet to our next halt, where, arriving after a wearisome journey at a hamlet, building was a job occupying both carpenter and smith; a crude wooden cylinder with piston mechanism, fixed to the bellows of a forge, peculiar to this part of the province, was at work. Preferring the company of the ponies to a house, crowded with both its rightful occupants and my muleteers, I fixed upon the open stalls, to await my evening meal, which Aziza slowly prepared after the firewood difficulty had been surmounted; he might have been upset, had he been so inclined, by the foolery and jests of a forward youth, one of 'the irrepressibles' who kept the rest in laughter at Aziza's expense; until I caused a change of expression on his countenance by a threat

which had due effect, as *he* vanished before reaching Yung-changfu.

The usual crowd gathered round to watch each morsel of food pass my lips. It might have been feeding-time for the king of beasts at the Zoo. To complete the picture required only the steel bars when, at times, I felt just as securely caged by a curious mob, attentively concerned lest they should miss a single movement of the hand and mouth, and who, no doubt, saw now for the first time the peculiar substitutes for chopsticks. My audience dispersed when nothing further was to be seen on my plate, and the rapidly fading light brought relief in darkness.

Traversing a rough, ascending trail next morning, Aziza excelled himself in parting company with his pony. The muleteers, out of perversity, always giving him the pony that showed the most wear from the previous day's toil. My saddle by this time also began to show sign of various defects. Precaution had been taken to have a breast-strap and crupper fitted, but, as the saddle was a copied English model where these appendages are not required, there were no proper fixtures for attachment. We were now traversing a trail more suited to the nimble goat, with the result that one either slid backwards or forwards according to the acclivity or declivity of the ground, and readjustment, with endless loosening and tightening of girths, caused delays. In the end I trusted to my feet; and, when my quest commenced in earnest, very seldom rode.

In Aziza's case it was frequently the fault of a tired, stumbling pony; and, perched on a native saddle, with ridiculously short stirrup-leathers, his knees tending to meet his chin, when he did take 'a header', the wonder was that he escaped so lightly, with the gully, ever present, awaiting to receive him. Such occasions were the immediate sign for the usual outburst of laughter at his discomfiture, regardless of any serious consequences, which might accrue from a bad accident. After all, it's a poor heart that never rejoices! Aziza was not slow to retaliate by appropriate jibes when the opportunity occurred, favourable to him. In time, he picked his own mount, and he ignored protest.

Shortly after noon on the fifth day out from Tengyueh, tangible indications were apparent that we were quitting the

hills and arriving at a well-cultivated plain. The rough trail was abandoned, and we turned towards the customary, flagstoned ridge between the ricefields, where on the scanty turf, tiny flowers strove to survive, stunted representatives of a formerly rich flora. As soon as the city of Yunchang came in sight, my head-muleteer drew out a formal document from a recess in his garment, with a request, evidently for half a dollar; for what purpose it was not easy to comprehend, unless as a thank-offering to the deity who had looked after our interests on the way, but most probably it was required for impost (*likin*), levied at our entrance. Anyhow, that was the last seen of *him*; on the following day I had a fresh relay of muleteers and animals by arrangement between themselves, as the stages are strictly apportioned between the chief places of note.

Losing touch with the caravan, neither of us had the faintest notion of the muleteers' whereabouts. The streets were packed with a market-day's throng. Aziza, full thirty years my junior, who only walked under compulsion, soon discovered that he could no longer ride; but it was not till we had reached the outskirts, at the extreme end of the city, he reported the loss of his greatcoat, which, on our descent to a warmer atmosphere, his pony had been loosely carrying. (As a rule the greatcoat and Aziza were inseparable.) Obviously, the only course open to him was to return promptly on his tracks. Perhaps, someone had been sufficiently honest to place it aside to await its owner—no such luck, the odds were far too great!

Eventually the serai was located, where quarters were found in an empty room which received an adequate sweep. My portable bath now came in handy, when I enjoyed the satisfaction of clean apparel. A tremor came, reminding us that we were in the earthquake zone; the dire effect of one shock in recent years, so far as property was demolished, we were to see later. My window looked out on the cobbled yard, crowded not only with mules. Among occupants of the farmyard, feathered world, a score of magpies¹ wandered; while several hoopoes² were to be seen, one of which was

¹ *Pica pica serica* Gould.

² *Upupa epops saturata* Lönnb. If resident breeding birds, they would have appeared darker in colour, corresponding to *U.e. longirostris* Jerd.

curtseying on the wall, uttering an *Oo-poo-poo*, double call, which, for me, was something novel, having longed to hear it, as if it was revelling in the sunshine, impelled to early mating. It was only January 10 !

I went out on a tour of circumspection through the streets. In Chinese towns and cities, the enclosures and right-angled entrances pertaining to the houses, usually blocked by gates, give one the impression that each householder looks upon his neighbour with suspicion. While the poorer members of the community do not share in this personal protection, the combined inhabitants regard the outside world in the same light, to the extent that a massive wall, even if in disrepair, surrounds them, with no ingress through the ponderous gates, once closed.

On passing a low-roofed dwelling I was accosted by a pleasant Chinaman in English who invited me in, when I was introduced to three, older members of the household. It appeared he was employed in the Government Salt Department ; this commodity is endlessly to be encountered, in the numerous caravans, transporting the bluish, regularly moulded chunks, more resembling stone. Conversation turned upon bandits, when he expressed surprise that I should be travelling unaccompanied, except for my servant, through such an unsettled country. An interruption was caused by a mob of soldiers, who had rushed down the street in boisterous and vituperative mood ; the object of their onslaught was the arrest of two miscreants, whom I met being forcibly led back, at my return. It required no serious thought in contemplation that I must be the sole, white man in this densely populated city on this night, when sleep blotted out all trivial care.

It was here to be noticed among a few brightly coloured birds, a paraquet,¹ inadequately represented in museums, and described as far back as 1850 from a cage bird in Lord Derby's menagerie, of which the locality was then unknown. These captives could only have been obtained in the mountains farther north, where I was later frequently to meet with them in the pine forests, where they feed on the seed of the cones. All the other members belonging to the Order—Psittaci, comprising the Parrots—are tropical birds, and this

¹ *Psittacula derbyana* (Fraser).

is a peculiar instance of adaptation to environment both in distribution and food.

In this country one's preconceived idea of methods and customs as an alien is subject to reversal: such as the drawing towards of the saw; included in a diverse list is the cat, which has to suffer the penalty of its usefulness and value, subject to restrained movement throughout daytime, as a precaution against loss by theft; when a number so tied were visible outside the house-doors. While Aziza replenished our supplies with vegetables, I divided sugar-cane between our mules, as a parting memento for a task so heroically performed. It was late on in the morning before the new batch of muleteers appeared. Opium smoking is the prevalent vice. I have little doubt that this delay was the result of a convivial drowse on the part of both lots of muleteers; and, as a consequence, to the detriment of their animals.

Once under way, beyond the street, villagers were to be met, with all sorts of merchandise from coffin planks to coarse vegetables. One was carrying a load of skins, mostly those of the Cat-bear¹ or Little Panda, a bright reddish-brown animal with white face and long, bushy, black-ringed tail—an inhabitant of the bamboo region at high altitudes. Bulbuls² in pairs, sitting side by side in close contact on the poplars that lined the ditches along the path, were indulging in love-peckings. Surely, the affectionate couple depicted on the willow-pattern *china* ought to represent a bulbul, and not a dove, as rightly regarded from childhood.

By midday we had reached a hamlet where the muleteers desired to halt for the night, when a further pipe of the insidious drug would have suited their convenience, but not mine. Giving them time to digest also my demonstrative demand to move out as soon as they had finished eating, the local school was inspected, and its industrious juveniles, copying the Chinese characters, with vertical brush and scrupulous neatness; but, of girls there were none, in accordance with the time-honoured custom, where females are not deemed worthy of education.

My meal, over, and sweetmeats having been purchased from an itinerant vender for the urchins of both sexes gathered

¹ *Ailurus fulgens styani* Thomas.

² *Pycnonotus aurigaster xanthorrhous* And.



(Upper) "A CONVENIENT METHOD IS PRACTISED THROUGHOUT YUNNAN, ALLOWING THE WHOLE WEIGHT TO BE LIFTED COLLECTIVELY."

(Lower) "IT WAS A CURIOUSLY MIXED, LIGHT, IF BULKY LOAD THAT LEFT BY THE PACK-PONY FROM LIKIANG." P. 45.

round, we followed a level path of flag-stones, bounded by ditches, until we reached some clay-pits, when the trail ascended the deforested, barren slopes of a hill on which stood out numerous graves, some of recent burial. Ravenous and furtive glancing dogs were frantically excavating caverns to reach the 'savoury repast'—a sight repugnant to one's susceptibility!

Villagers were lustily using the flail to separate the chaff. Here comfortable quarters were found in a room used as a barn. A columbine or aquilegia,¹ widely spread in distribution, but now dwarfed in size, grew sparingly on a bank above the village. An unusually fierce breed of dog occurred in some numbers. My eyes had ever to be on the alert lest a brute, bolder than the rest, sank his teeth into legs or concentrated on bare knees.

Steps led to the stables which were below the level of the yard, the declivity of the ground having been conveniently taken advantage of: the mules entered their stalls to subside into quietude when fed, and the two cows received their evening supply of rank, green fodder in the yard. I commandeered for payment a bundle for my pony that had seen no grass since leaving Tengyueh. At this time of the year the country is very parched. If it was not for the allowance of meal and beans, the mules would badly fare. Surprising, it is, how they manage to carry any load on such an insufficient supply, when exposed ribs testify to hard times. Harsh treatment is also their lot; to withstand a muleteer's curses is of little account, but when backed by a well-aimed stone is of some consequence—a noble animal, indeed, whether mule or pony!

A convenient method is practised throughout Yunnan regarding the loads, which are tied by thongs to a trestle, allowing the whole weight to be lifted collectively; when the mule, in answer to a call or, more often, a kick, will duck its head; the load is then dropped into position upon a wooden saddle, with a begrimed, greasy numnah or saddle-cloth below. This arrangement of compactness has the distinct advantage of being easily released from the mule in the case of a bad fall, which often means a broken back, if it had not already been thrown clear of the animal. At the midday halt it

¹ *Aquilegia viridiflora*.

was gratifying to see the muleteers recognized the importance of sunning saddle-cloths, though sore backs were far too frequent, to an appreciable extent, unavoidable, under such adverse conditions.

Again, the unvarying trail! On a descent we passed a temple, whereupon a priest appeared, very excited lest we should pass without paying a contribution towards the upkeep of the trail, undergoing repair by one of the most carefully laid block-stone work as yet seen. A dead mule lay below, into whose carcass a number of jungle-crows¹ were thrusting their beaks. In a hollow was a dirty village, where the proprietor of the hostel did his best to persuade me to stay; but there were still a few hours of daylight, and I was not favourably impressed with the place so decided to walk on to the next village. However, matters were not improved thereby—no wonder the miserable woman in charge and her two children suffered from acute trachoma, with such filthy conditions, rampant.

A glance at the small veranda sufficing, my usual corner in the open stalls was preferred, with my thoughts on the road "to-morrow to fresh woods and pastures new". Before this could be, muleteers had to be roused. Meantime, four villagers had bound one of the fattest hogs, selected for a slaughter which seemed excessively lengthy, judging by the prolonged, but inevitable, diminishing squeals of the victim in its agony. All this had been performed alongside 'the Kashmiri' whilst engaged eating, after he had attended to my wants. Now, if there is one thing which is anathema to a 'son of the prophet', Mohammed—it is the pig! This act did not pass without comment. Whether Aziza was not so lavish as usual in payment for our night's accommodation in consequence of his displeasure, I know not, though it seemed like it; but that was his affair.

Doling out some boracic powder, ointment, and lint, augmented with instructions by Sign Language (at which one excels with practice) to be sure to bathe the eyes with clean, boiled water, I was glad to be free from this squalor. Apparently it was killing day, and a number of hogs were to be seen in all stages of preparation, with the steaming water

¹ *Corvus levaillanti mengtszensis* La Touche.

much in evidence when some vigorous scraping was in hand. Occasionally, should the hog not reach the standard in girth, the husband is assisted by a good wife with her lungs, when putting pressure on through a bamboo tube until 'blown' herself, in cases where the hog has refused to fatten, or shown signs of an early departure from a misunderstood complaint. Only thus can the scraping process be satisfactorily performed!

Aziza had repeatedly asked me: "When shall we reach the big river?" though it always seemed *one more river to cross*—and the Yangtse too far off yet, to speculate in futures! In due course, the abyss of the Mekong appeared like a black, bottomless Styx through a rift in the mountain, and we started immediately on a descent of an almost endless flight in hundreds of stone-cobbled steps. Meeting a caravan on its way up, at corners there were constant jams, with scarcely room for two animals to pass on the straight. The suspension-bridge obviously needed sundry repairs in the replacement of some, requisite planks. The river, overlooked by perpendicular walls of rock, sterile in barrenness, looked forbidding, even on this bright day.

My muleteers had decided not to follow the main trail to Tali, as it bore a bad reputation for bandits, so we struck to the east through unsurveyed country—a blank on the map—a journey that was to take me seven days of hard going. The trail for a time would show sign of a regularly travelled surface, when later, one's preconceived idea of the anticipated direction would be nullified by an abrupt turn, either through cultivation or in and out of a sugar-cane brake. Again, it might be a river-bed that had to be crossed and recrossed, times without number, with the undulations of the land always obstructing the view of the trail ahead. No scout could ever follow such a trail, which could only be in use during the season when the rivers are at low water, unless he was thoroughly acquainted with the route through long experience; yet the muleteers seemed to take it as a matter of course, and, in fact, they were scouts with a remarkable development of the bump of locality through acute observation.

The jasmine was in flower. In one village, sweet limes, a difficult fruit to discriminate from the orange, hung on the trees in profusion. Crushing sugar-cane was in progress.

Bullocks were performing a perpetual, circumscribed movement as the ponderous mill-stones revolved.

A long, arid stretch intervened when the trail ascended, until a hamlet on the crest was reached. The household were exceptionally affable. Having partaken of the hot water, on this occasion professedly *not* tea, in the porcelain bowl offered to me, I chose to sleep in my selected spot to avoid vermin, and rather than risk any complication by accepting their hospitality. Nevertheless, I believe they were genuinely friendly towards us, and probably they were Moslems. It would happen sometimes that villagers ran towards Aziza in an eagerness to proclaim their religious faith, enquiring if he was also of 'the Faithful'. This masonic recognition interested me considerably, as neither party could have ever seen a Moslem, differing in colour and language from himself, previous to this initial encounter; it could only be an instance of facial resemblance, accentuated by a hirsute growth, which was very marked in the case of Aziza, and also myself by this time.

The villages passed through produced the requisite fowl and the few eggs, and at times it was possible to get a bird in hand for the next day's meals. I demurred at having to masticate a rooster that had been in full use of its legs half an hour before entering the pot. Fortunately, each member of our party had a highly cherished enamel-plate, which retained in an inner cavity the hot water placed therein; and, while the midday snack was always cold, I was spared that tragic event: a cold fowl's drum-stick with a cold potato on a cold aluminium plate on a cold January evening.

Next day we descended through pine forests, when the trail followed the bed of a stream. Wild, indigenous tea appeared above us on a bank to our right; after our midday halt the drizzling rain continued, and the mules slid about on the clayey surface, more than once to come down on all fours when the load had to be lifted clear before the animal could rise. The uncertainty where we should find our night's quarters was relieved by a response from a village on the opposite side of the river. Breaking away, we crossed, disturbing several Long-billed Ringed Plovers¹ which showed anxiety at our intrusion, and they were most likely breeding on

¹ *Charadrius placidus* Gray.

the low spits, with the water at cold-weather level. We had arrived at the house of a hospitable Moslem. The wretched conditions accounted for by cold rain had damped the light-heartedness of the muleteers. Aziza and one muleteer at loggerheads came to blows over some triviality, when both had to be severely reprimanded to prevent the likelihood of a more serious row. I was glad to accept a place by the welcome fire and a nook for my bedding, taking all risks.

Tangible signs next morning were apparent of a change in the weather, which, as it proved, resulted in a fine day. In preference to seeking accommodation in the hamlet, recently vacated, I camped with the muleteers on a flat near a river, included in the same system of yesterday. My pony with a few others would persist in wandering into the scanty cultivation, as green or dry fodder was at a discount.

Without tent, my stretcher was opened out, and though it was a beautifully clear night, it was decidedly cold. I awoke in the morning to find my bedding moist with a heavy dew. It began to rain; as we ascended the hill, it turned to sleet. A Lady Amherst Pheasant¹ was seen in its native haunts for the first time, in the distance; whereas, only tail feathers at a wayside house had previously been in evidence, but sufficient to excite my curiosity. Large waxy camellias, madder-rose in colour, now appeared by the side of the trail; and, when on the summit at eight thousand feet, a cock Elegant or Black-necked Pheasant² was flushed a few paces away, which must have been pecking a few moments before the dung from some mules, prior to our arrival.

Down into the bed of another stream we went, after a stiff ascent and a traverse of another ridge, we arrived at a village where the muleteers wished to stay for the night; but I was not altogether satisfied with the attitude of the villagers, as it appeared to have been bazaar-day, savouring of liquor and a superfluity of talk by the noisy and familiar crowd; I was less pleased with the house offered, so close to the road. Evidently warned, as the presence of bandits had been freely intimated, but leaving in spite of this gratuitous advice, we had not gone far up the ridge when the muleteers

¹ *Chrysolophus amherstiae* (Leadb.).

² *Phasianus colchicus elegans* Ell.

had to stand the brunt of an ebullition of liberal sarcasm. To be received, however, in glum silence, and although unintelligible to Aziza and myself, it had reference to the upsetting of their plans.

Gaining the summit, we entered a forest of oak and magnolia, when little original forest had been passed through within recent days, and we reached an altitude of eight thousand five hundred feet. On the descent darkness set in; I had some doubt concerning my policy in pushing on, when a faint call emanated from somewhere in the distance, in answer to the entreaties of the muleteers, causing our caravan to leave the trail down a steep descent.

We had proceeded, blindly following the mules when, without warning, they got entangled on what appeared to be the edge of a cliff. We had now to break away, and, after several diversions, the only path was found which led to the lone house. Never was a more comforting sight than the briskly burning fire. Cobs of maize, hanging from the roof, denoted we had reached the requisite elevation for this cereal. Seated above, the master of the household held the eldest son, one of his young progeny comprising four, vouchsafed from the number of raised fingers, in answer to signs from me. I retired to rest on the elevated boards; while our unexpected presence must have been an enigma to our host, who was still stripping the corn, contentedly ruminating as if he was chewing the cud, while feeding the fire with the discarded cobs. Soon I was oblivious of my present surroundings when this hut in Yunnan was as far off as Timbuctoo. Woodpeckers were seldom seen on this stage, and notwithstanding suitable country was frequently traversed between Tengyueh and Talifu, I heard them tapping only on three occasions. Once the trail had been reached, again the sharp descent continued through well-wooded country, sparsely populated on steep mountain-slopes when, at a favourable view-point, a glimpse of the tortuous windings of yet another river in the deep rift of a valley ahead was confusing, as I had not anticipated a river of such volume to lie across our trail; this proved to be the Yangpi. It was with some difficulty the midday meal was served; but, meagre in quantity, with less difficulty partaken, while jammed in by mules on a narrow ledge, overlooking the gorge. A

Rufous Turtle Dove¹ was shot, which fell into the river on the far side where it was adroitly retrieved by one of the muleteers. All my equipment had to be transferred across on a rickety bamboo-raft, when the last instalment saw a decrepit pony and our two selves reach the rocky bank in safety, if now, there was every likelihood of our losing the animal which had managed to wedge in its hind legs between the open bamboos, in its frantic efforts to secure a foothold. Subsequently, the river was crowded with the swimming mules. In their midst there could be detected the sturdy, grey pony, belonging to Theodore Roosevelt, that had decamped at Tengyueh on the morning of departure by the rest of our party, and I was bringing him along. The scene was one of wild excitement, as the mules of another caravan had left the same bank simultaneously, when between fifty and sixty animals were struggling in the current, urged on in their endeavours by volleys of stones and an uproar of shouting.

After this arduous task a rest supervened, and the mules ably managed to extricate themselves out of this defile, where the difficulties were increased by a greasy surface with recent rain. Regaining a level camping-ground in forest, the muleteers would have preferably remained, but under mild protest continued, until a straggling hamlet was reached, overlooking the river far below.

Aziza was occupied in bartering for fresh vegetables, about which he was much more concerned than myself, when the women more than once turned aside, too shy to approach such a stranger to themselves, both in colour of skin and diversity of dress in garment and turban. The same predicament occurred at a house, undergoing sundry repairs, where we found a room on the ground-floor, littered with planks and rubbish. When a request for firewood showed that the affrighted woman had barricaded herself behind a locked door, and it was only after repeatedly knocking and renewed entreaties that a response eventually came. After darkness ensued, I changed my films in the stables, where my pony was less restive than the rest.

Never had the trail risen with such abruptness as it did next morning. Foot by foot, the mules gained on ground that

¹ *Streptopelia orientalis orientalis* (Lath.).

rose almost sheer from our last halt. Panting and staggering, to rest at short intervals, the summit was finally conquered! A small, picturesque sheet of water in a hollow of the hills lay to the right; while scattered woods relieved the abrupt flanks of rugged hills to the left. For the second occasion since leaving the Mekong the trail reached an altitude of eight thousand five hundred feet. An undulating descent supervened, when the sound of discordant music, emanating from a gaily dressed knot of villagers in the distance, denoted festivities connected with a marriage festival; but my attention was centred on the few Nutcrackers¹ that had a refuge in a pretty bit of conifer forest above, with no sign of our caravan, which we had allowed to push on ahead, unwittingly.

This spurt on the muleteers' part regularly happened when nearing a halt, if on the descent; now, I was in a quandary, to find at one point we were actually going south, when the trend of our direction should lie almost due north. Another, wide, alluvial plain opened out in the prospect. I surmised the solution would be solved by a likely hollow where we ought to find our caravan. Without meeting a soul to inquire, of little moment if we had, I carried on, in the firm belief that some clue would eventually be forthcoming. It might have been anyone's caravan, yet a skew-bald pony that I seemed to recollect, and later, a youth came into the focus of my binocular, which allayed any uncertainty. My midday meal, soon finished, I left; but I delayed at a favourable locality, frequented by a few David's Parrotbills,² with every chance of obtaining other interesting birds;³ securing for my first occasion the Yellow-bellied Bush-warbler⁴ in its winter quarters. It was now the muleteers' turn to dissuade me from my intention, when reluctantly, I agreed to the request to proceed past a hamlet where I would have stayed for the night, by their leaving me little or no choice as they hurried along.

Before reaching the village of Mingshih, the rice-lands had to be crossed along the insufficient footing afforded by the narrow, divisional ridges between the plots where no

¹ *Nucifraga caryocatactes macella* Thayer & Bangs.

² *Paradoxornis guttaticollis* A. Dav. ³ *Moupinia poecilotis sordidior* Roths.

⁴ *Phylloscopus subaffinis* Grant.

trail existed. Apart from one or two of our muleteers, who enlivened the march with the repetition of an interminable refrain, in a falsetto voice that would have outclassed the howl of a jackal, our daily stages had been harmonious; but one of the younger, mischievous fry, sighting an opportunity, took part with some of the village urchins in aiming a few well-directed stones at my pony, as a crude method to increase my pace—stone-throwing is a natural method of retaliation, if not exactly a favourite pastime in China.

A swarm of children met us on entering the village, bawling incomprehensible terms, but they appeared otherwise in good humour at this burst of energy. The serai was more than ordinarily furnished with massive articles, more ornamental than useful, even though the grease lay thick upon the table. The proprietor joined me at the miserable apology for a fire, in the insignificant pieces, countable thus, of charcoal that had been brought on a brasier or *hopan*. A small quantity of ground-nuts¹ was left for everyone to help himself. Removing my beard caused my host to express astonishment, because he evidently questioned me concerning my religious faith, having regarded me as a Moslem.

Hérons² and two or three Black Storks³ were, singly, leisurely flapping overhead with measured beat, next morning, as we crossed the shallow channels of the Red river that, hereabouts, has its source—a river, familiar to me some years ago during a sojourn in the French province of Tonkin. Rough in appearance, natives, possibly Lolo with a Minchia strain, were hastening down the hill, laden with coarse vegetables. It was not until summit-level had been attained, and an apparently empty-looking, substantially built house had been passed whence a party of soldiers emerged, who shouted in derisive terms, endeavouring to mimic my words, far from complimentary, that I had used to the youth of the previous day's exploit, who had recommenced, surreptitiously to pitch a stone, now and again at my pony, lagging behind.

On our descent, a blue expanse of water came into view, without a ripple on its placid surface, dotted here and there by specks representing fishing-craft; when, never was the

¹ *Arachis hypogæa*, an introduction indigenous to Brazil.

² *Ardea cinerea jowyi* Clark.

³ *Ciconia nigra* (L.).

Erh Hai disclosed in greater perfection of colour and tranquillity. A dark coloured eagle dashed over the crest of a knoll which, inferred by its élan and size, was the Golden Eagle,¹ but only a still closer inspection would have disclosed its correct identity; though never have I seen the Eastern Steppe Eagle,² with which it might be confused, travel at that rapidity. As, in my experience, the latter eagle is a sluggish flier, with much the same movements as a buzzard. Shortly afterwards, when at seven thousand feet, a cock Jungle-fowl³ was clearly seen to enter some brushwood, yet it had mysteriously disappeared once we tried to beat it out. The ground was honeycombed with the burrows of voles.

After a long stretch we arrived at the precinct of Hsiakuan, where the trail was not well defined, and some time was lost in rounding up our ponies which had wandered to forage. We had a cursory look at the hostel, and I obtained some dry fodder for my pony, after a brief halt; having consulted Aziza, I decided to continue to our destination, Tali. This stage proved more lengthy than anticipated. Darkness fell, the rambling trail with all its cobbles appeared to have no ending, particularly, once inside the city, as apparently, Mr and Mrs W. J. Hanna's house at the China Inland Mission, where I was bound, lay at the extreme, northern end. Great was my surprise when I was unexpectedly hailed by my companions, as one by one came forward, recognized by voice before the dim light from the hand-lamp had time to disclose faces, to offer his congratulations at my safe arrival; and a further gratification was the hearty welcome from Mr Hanna. The unexpected had happened: the reunion was the more merry in consequence.

Demolished houses, relics of the Mohammedan massacre in 1873, and of the devastating earthquake during our kind hosts' residence, and, to some extent on the outskirts, the work of lawless bandits, showed some of the havoc through which this city had undergone, having passed through more vicissitudes than the most of important Chinese cities. Groups of women, dumping and pounding mud between the hollow stone

¹ *Aquila chrysaetos hodgsoni* Ticeh. ² *Aquila nipalensis nipalensis* (Hodgs.).

³ *Gallus bankiva robinsoni* Roths. Previously not known to occur so far north in distribution.

walls, denoted some activity on the part of the inhabitants in making amends to cope with the ravages of the past, as we moved out once more as a united caravan.

A few Red-bellied Squirrels¹ and a Buzzard² were obtained on the march through villages where poplar trees formed the only vegetation. On bare ground, signs of voles were frequently in evidence. To the west, the lower slopes of the mountains, now snow capped, were one vast graveyard, crowded with the legions of the past, enduring penance under stone; several miles had elapsed before this depressing feature in the landscape disappeared from view. Nearing Shang-kuan a large party of the Crow-tit³ was seen and a Wren-warbler⁴ was collected. The military escort was soon outdistanced, and nothing further was seen of them until after my arrival at the hostel. The rest of our party having preceded me, the closed gate of the town of Tengchwan was once again opened to allow my entrance without interrogation. Jack and I had a busy night's work in preparing the day's specimens, somewhat hampered by the want of adequate room and light. Below, the confined space of the yard presented an animated scene of closely packed animals where, in corners, the flickering embers of fires threw a lurid flare over face and form.

The reeds had not yet been cut when we resumed after an early start along the much frequented, level trail, which divided a sheet of water, an upper extension of the lake we were now to leave. Little Grebes⁵ dived; bunches of Teal⁶ changed position; while a momentary flash of white wing-axillaries and body denoted a simultaneous, turning movement in the air of a company of vivacious sandpipers, which frequented the limited muddy spaces, bordering its banks. Numbers of warblers, among which could be detected the Blue-throat,⁷ delighted in this temporary retreat, afforded by the thick cover of the reeds on its surface—regretfully quitted.

Market day is the same the whole world over: the countryside thronged in endless file at our approach. China would not be China without the hog, but, even in the dreamy East,

¹ *Callosciurus erythræus michianus* Robins. & Wrough.

² *Buteo buteo burmanicus* Hume.

³ Evidently *Suthora suthora styani* Ripp.

⁴ *Prinia inornata exter* Thayer & Bangs.

⁵ *Podiceps ruficollis poggei* (Reichw.).

⁶ *Anas crecca crecca* L

⁷ Probably *Cyanosylvia suecica robusta* But.

where time is of little account, the indolent peregrinations of a hog, overburdened by obesity, were altogether too slow for the Celestial, for once in a hurry to reach the market. Hence, the most expeditious methods necessitated much physical effort; for its final journey the hog had to submit to force when it was carried, either on the back of its owner, or suspended in mid air in a crate.

Leaving the canal, lined with poplars, wreathed with a parasitic growth of mistletoe, we halted within a narrow street in order to close up our caravan before entering bandit-infested country, which was reached after we had traversed a defile in the hills where, at its farther end, the stone bridge and houses of the village had been reduced to ruins. A deeply cut trail was succeeded by open country, with small villages, set in pleasant surroundings of poplar groves where a few Squirrels¹ were collected. The Tree Shrew,² with a close superficial resemblance to a squirrel, also occurred about the walls. While cranes again appeared, one party of which was probably the Hooded Crane.³ A drizzle started after midday, and the miserable quarters afforded by the hostel received more complimentary mention than, in reality, worth.

Niukai had been vacated when, on reaching rising ground, our caravan was subjected to a close-at-hand inspection by a numerous group of armed mercenaries, staggered at our assurance, with their head-dress wrapped into an unusually shaped, saucer-like turban, who had lined up in the village through which we were passing. In appearance, they looked a thoroughly bad lot, and their scowls undoubtedly could not belie their deeds. Some short distance beyond, when in the rear of our caravan, I was to meet other three members of this gang, it was left to Tsao, a likeable Chinese servant, to explain that we had nothing to spare for blackmail. About this point, it was difficult to detect friend from foe, as an irate scoundrel was side stepping on and off the trail, interfering with the progress of some women, laden with their purchases. Apparently oblivious of my presence, he was just as determined no one else should pass that way without settling his demand in coin—and many were the muttered protests. I fully expected to see him discharge

¹ *Callosciurus erythræus michianus* Robins. & Wrough.

² *Tupaia belangeri chinensis* And.

³ *Megalornis monachus* (Temm).

his rifle. As I could be of no assistance and I might have complicated matters, noting Tsao's warning, we continued on our way, when a rise in the knoll cut off the incident from sight. What the several rifle shots meant to those villagers—the report of which was ominously audible—will never be known!

Jackdaws¹ had been much in evidence at eight thousand two hundred feet, with the dimorphic mutant, preponderant. As we neared our halting-place, at intervals villagers were occupied digging out the roots of the wild rose bushes, evidently edible, which lined the hedges on a portion of the trail where I was struck by its improvement. The accommodation at Tienwei proved to be superior to our last, because we found the upper room vacant.

On nearing the walled town of Kienchwan, the most of an opportunity was made to secure some duck. In this locality, the numerous swamps proved to be a crowded retreat for water-birds of innumerable species, and it was quite the best water-logged ground seen, so far, for duck and geese. This deviation took me outside the town; it was only when I required to pick up the trail that the thronged street had to be entered. The Falcated Teal,² restricted to Eastern Asia, was particularly numerous; a snow-white, little gull could only have been the Slender-billed Gull.³ As many birds were lost as obtained, owing to the inaccessibility of the swamps and insufficiency of time; and, while Tsao did his best to retrieve the lost birds, promise of reward failed to move the village youths. At no great distance from the trail on level ground, the Hill or Rock Pigeon⁴ in a large flock appeared for the first time. Late in the afternoon, when nearing our halting-place, an expansive stretch of boggy, terraced ground lay between us and the river, to the west. Brahminy Duck,⁵ ruddy ochreous in the distance, in scattered pairs, were to be seen on the patches of shallow water, flushed with golden tints from the setting sun. Deciding to try our luck, Theodore Roosevelt worked round to the left, while Tsao accompanied me. Discarding my *topi*, in deference to good intentions at a time when one's discretion is suppressed, I put on Tsao's

¹ *Corvus dauuricus dauuricus* Pall.

² *Anas falcata* Georgi.

³ *Larus gelastes* Keys & Blas.

⁴ *Columba rupestris rupestris* Pall.

⁵ *Casarca ferruginea* (Pall.).

knitted woollen cap, which must have brought me success when, as a result of a discharge from my 20-bore with only number eight shot, no other size to hand, a drake fell with a heavy thud at our feet.

Tsao had been a collector with the botanist, Forrest¹; he had experienced his share of exciting dangers, having been the only servant to escape with his master when the Lamas overwhelmed the Roman-Catholic Mission at Tsekou in the valley of the Mekong when, out of eighty Christians, sixty-five were massacred, including the two French Fathers.

The air was crisp, with frost and rime covering both ground and hedge, as we filed out in an early hour from the hamlet of Paochiao, but no earlier than a large party of Crow-tits,² now flitting on and about the hedges, calling in a subdued twitter, obviously active with the low temperature and hard conditions. From the height reached after a stiff ascent, a beautiful, miniature sheet of water, in colour a deep cerulean blue, lay in the distance to the west; while, to the north, the majestic snow-capped range, culminating in the peak of Satsetō, shone in all its brilliant purity under the rays of an Eastern sun, rapidly increasing in power. Larks were hovering in the clear sky, pouring out profusive song. All of us were elated under such an ideal outlook, when Mother Nature only expected a receptive mind. Crater-like pits on both sides of the trail appeared; for which no explanation was forthcoming, though undoubtedly a natural formation. Another, larger tarn in the distance, Lashipa by name, added its quota of beauty to the landscape. A long, undulating descent, before a deserted village was wended where two roosters hung lifeless from the upper branches of the adjacent hedge, a symbol in proof that death had intervened. A protracted, level stretch remained; in due course the picturesque, elevated quarter of Likiang was within our reach, and, having crossed its ancient, stone bridge, shortly afterwards we had arrived at the mission house of Mr and Mrs Andrews, where no travel-stained men could have been received with more kindness and hospitality.

¹ George Forrest died on January 5, 1932 at Tengyueh. Through his botanical and ornithological discoveries, the richness of the Mekong-Salween divide and Likiang mountains was made known to science.

² *Suthora styani styani* Ripp.

CHAPTER II

ALONG THE YANGTSE BIG BEND

A TIBETAN caravan, encamped alongside our trail two days ago, had given me a hurried glimpse of big, hulking fellows in thick woollen or yak-skin clothes, and long, cloth or hide-lined boots, unkempt and dirty, recalling past meetings with other members of this hardy race in the interior of Sikkim. In Likiang, one rubbed shoulders with straggling parties awaiting a return load, or a favourable day to start for the rolling, wind-swept uplands. In another category, the groups of little Nashi women, stood aside in blue jacket and frock, broadly hemmed with braid—what once was white—with a single row of, seven or so, large circles in similar embellishment and colour across the back—like so many catherine-wheels, already pinned, awaiting a match—to complete the dress, the head was enclosed within a cowl. Thus were two of the extreme types in occupation of the street or market-place. Beggars, in rags, were less obtrusive than customary. Rival factions of boys, with bamboo squirts, were engaged in harmless mirth on opposing sides, sousing each other from the clear-flowing stream where, higher in the shallows of the swift current, partially naked youths were attempting to spear fish by hurling, of which I saw a number being gutted while yet alive, which must, however, have been netted, as many were the abortive attempts to strike the elusive quarry.

With the departure of my companions, with whom I again arranged to rejoin at Tachienlu, I moved out two days later to the Nashi (Moso) village of Ngulukö, some ten miles north, where I trained three youths, volunteers, entirely uninstructed previously, who showed an aptitude for the work, and I collected on the slopes of the snow mountain, Satsetö. Quickly settling down, the empty school-house afforded a room for my innumerable kit, and it served as an excellent base to commence

operations. It was less of a shelter for myself, as the howling wind penetrated from all corners, carrying with it any light articles within its grip; while the snow drifted in through the latticed front, whose paper covering had perished, but it might have been replaced at my expense. A brasier of charcoal afforded a limited warmth to chilled hands engaged in delicate work. Of the available light, a curious crowd would block out much of it in the space covered by heads and shoulders; but curiosity took a more intimate turn when the room would be filled with hangers-about, with a partiality for my charcoal fire. Meal-time was invariably attractive to idlers. Setting and visiting traps, combined with shooting excursions, took up the hours of daylight; and the days were all too short for what I endeavoured to accomplish. If caught in box-traps alive, small mammals could be examined for fleas,¹ at leisure. Concerning those killed in spring-traps, the parasites had often left the host, which was generally frozen stiff. Whatever method, if not the best, it was employed according to circumstances. A linen bag was used for live specimens, but later on, or when in the field, handkerchiefs found another use.

The reasons for this occupation are several as, within our knowledge, certain species of fleas disseminate disease; the distribution of these and other species is made known to the medical world by the specialist who, in the initial instance, is dependent on the field-collector for the requisite material. To the systematist dealing with geographical forms, the parasite often gives a clue to the subspecific identity of the host, though some mammals, rightly regarded as subspecies occupying continuous or discontinuous areas, may harbour the same flea, or the same identical parasite.

Occasionally, a larger mammal, civet-cat,² palm-civet,³

¹ The fleas (*Siphonaptera*) collected on this journey have been enumerated and described by Dr Karl Jordan, F.R.S., in *Novitates Zoologicae*, vol. xxxviii, 1932, pp. 276-290.

Ceratophyllus sinicus sp. nov.

Ceratophyllus euteles J. & R. 1911.

Frontopsylla spadix cansa subsp. nov.

Frontopsylla spadix spadix J. & R. 1921.

Paradoxopsyllus custodis sp. nov.

Neopsylla stevensi Roths. 1915.

Neopsylla specialis sp. nov.

Neopsylla honora sp. nov.

Ctenophthalmus parvus sp. nov.

Ctenophthalmus yunnanus sp. nov.

Ctenophthalmus dinormus sp. nov.

Stenischia gen. nov.

Stenischia mirabilis sp. nov.

Geusibia gen. nov.

Geusibia torosa sp. nov.

² *Viverra zibetha* subsp. ?

Laguma larvata intrudens Wrought.

or hare,¹ would be obtained additionally to the numerous specimens of small, ground rodents: voles,² rats,³ shrews,⁴ wood,⁵ and house⁶ mice; besides two species of bats,⁷ of which this branch of the collection largely consisted. The Tupaia⁸ or Tree Shrew, a misnomer in this habitat when showing a decided preference for the dilapidated, boundary walls, was met with here for the last time.

Amongst the birds obtained was a Redstart,⁹ with the male in colour a rich chestnut, the back and throat black, adorned with a large, white throat-patch, and crown of cobalt blue. Driven down by inclement weather, scattered individuals had taken advantage of the sheltered ground at the mountain base. At this time, the Elegant Pheasant¹⁰ had forsaken its dense retreat, and a clear wing-shot could be got, as an 'old cock' would rise rocketing out of a gully; while an apple-green breasted Blood Pheasant,¹¹ wanting the vermilion-red splashes of its near ally, under the same rigorous conditions, preferred still to trust to its legs for safety in the recesses of a thorny scrub-growth. Distributed over the plain were small parties of the Chough,¹² entirely black except for the long, red bill, and similarly coloured legs. The whole community for miles around must have been represented in the congregation of three hundred or thereabouts that was to be seen in late February, preparatory to pairing. Situated on the plain some three miles from the village lay a tarn, partially artificial, with one side banked where, on February 8, I shot a male Mallard¹³ and a female Teal¹⁴; and on February 14, a female mallard was shot when two pairs of mallard, one pair of Spotbill,¹⁵ separated from the other ducks, and a bunch of

¹ *Lepus comus* G. M. Allen.

² *Eothenomys custos rubellus* Allen. *Eothenomys proditor* Hint. *Eothenomys melanogaster fidelis* Hint.

³ *Rattus nitidus* Hodgs. *Rattus flavipectus* M.-Edw. *Rattus confucianus* M.-Edw. *Rattus norvegicus socer* Miller. Eighty-five specimens of the Norway rat were obtained which was met with nowhere else.

⁴ *Blarinella wardi* Thomas.

⁵ *Apodemus latronum* Thomas. *Apodemus agrarius chevrieri* M.-Edw.

⁶ *Mus musculus* L.

⁷ *Rhinolophus lepidus* subsp? *Rhinolophus affinis tener* And.

⁸ *Tupaia belangeri chinensis* And.

⁹ *Phoenicurus schisticeps* (Gray). ¹⁰ *Phasianus colchicus elegans* Ell.

¹¹ *Ithaginis cruentus clarkei* Roths.

¹² *Pyrrhocorax pyrrhocorax himalayensis* (Gould).

¹³ *Anas platyrhynchos platyrhynchos* L.

¹⁴ *Anas crecca crecca* L.

¹⁵ Possibly *Anas poecilorhyncha zonorhyncha* Swinh.

teal were in possession. On rare occasions an Alpine Accentor¹ was to be seen, but I failed to obtain specimens. A rusty-Red-throated Thrush² was the most plentiful among other allied ouzel-migrants³; one of which, Kessler's Thrush,⁴ was new to Yunnan, three specimens being obtained. During my rambles the Goldcrest⁵ was located in a scattered party which must have numbered well over a dozen. Though, only detected by its high-pitched tit-like note, emanating from the upper foliage of the conifers. The arrival of the Magpie Robin⁶ and a little Dove⁷—summer migrants—was indicative of the dominating influence operating, which was almost summarily to receive a check, as snow fell on the following day, so were the fluctuations in temperature. Fortunately ticks only inconvenience during dry weather, in the winter or cold season, but their activities are not always apparent until the spiny beak is well embedded; their presence, unexpected, was soon established here as elsewhere in the East. Butterflies were as yet not numerous. The Camberwell Beauty⁸ was on the wing in the bed of a torrent, which were hybernating examples, tempted out by limited spells of sunshine. Later, it was met with at Yungning and as far north as Tachienlu, but nevertheless was irregularly distributed; while two species of Clouded Yellow⁹ flitted rapidly over wind-swept ground, but too early for any in number.

Water and charcoal carrying and other household duties, even attending to the vegetable plot, were mainly confined to the women; and, as the herding of goats and cattle was left to the children, little attempt was made in an exertion of manual effort by the male members of the community, and that only under the compulsion of necessity. At such a time lethargy gives place to a spell of energy, limited in duration,

¹ *Prunella collaris ripponi* Hart.

² *Turdus ruficollis ruficollis* Pall.

³ *Turdus ruficollis atrogularis* Temm. Also new to Yunnan.

Turdus naumanni eunomus Temm. *Turdus rubrocanus gouldi* (Verr.).

⁴ *Turdus kessleri* (Przew.).

⁵ *Regulus regulus yunnanensis* Rippon.

⁶ *Copsychus saularis saularis* (L.).

⁷ *Streptopelia chinensis forresti* Roths.

The Pipit, *Anthus spinoletta japonicus* Temm. & Schleg. was obtained on February 14. New to Yunnan.

A number of the Skylark, *Alauda arvensis weigoldi* Hart. were obtained. New to Yunnan.

⁸ *Vanessa antiopae* L.

⁹ *Colias fieldii chinensis* Verity.

Colias hyale L. Two specimens of the Brimstone, *Gonepteryx rhamni*, L., and ten specimens of *Gonepteryx alvinda* Blanch., were obtained in this locality; besides *Satsuma chalybea* Leech (March 9). *Chrysophanus li* Oberth., and a Skipper, *Carterocephalus (Pamphila) pulchra* Leech (March 9).

when the land requires attention. Not to be dispensed with, however, his wife or daughter leads the hardy, little bullocks, as the rude iron share is guided over uneven and obstructed ground, scraping a shallow furrow, considered adequate for the purpose, where much is left to chance. Though several cereals are cultivated, a bearded wheat or barley is sown for preference; while millet and beans are in demand, though the last are only regarded as food for the poorest of the poor.

Having been brought up on porridge, and realizing the nutritive value of legumes, a chance was not to be missed when I obtained a stock of meal, having had the long awns rubbed out and sifted, a laborious task for the woman, who filled a second bag with 'case-hardened' beans that would hold out, so far as it could be estimated, for my requirement, and to be my mainstay. While I loathe sugar in porridge, the absence of milk is a drawback, but to go without can be endured, as with many, other, everyday commodities where none are available. Of the efficacy of tea, I am a firm believer, as this necessity ensures the boiling of all water, and a limited quantity had been earlier on obtained, preparatory to an emergency. Unfortunately, or on the contrary, I had not been inoculated against typhoid. Another important item—a hard knock when I ran out and had to use the local product—was my supply of tobacco. A friend indeed which saved me many a meal! Further to these essentials I did not bother, trusting, somewhat on slender grounds, to the country to supply a limited number of fowls and eggs. The real Chinese egg is not what might be regarded exactly as a fresh egg. Under the régime of a more practical market, eggs naturally fall into selected grades: shop, pickled, new-laid, etc. Still, when an 'antiquated' egg is offered, revealing the secret of its contents to the nose with shell intact, its classification would have enriched the repertoire of that expert, the inimitable Dan Leno. If necessary, candles could be substituted for kerosene. A supply of matches took up no space. As the world-travelled trunk, which had partaken in the late President Roosevelt's many expeditions, was now full, a carpenter was engaged to make two substantial boxes, $3\frac{1}{2} \times 1\frac{1}{2} \times 2\frac{1}{4}$ ft. in size, to hold the largest skins, should it be either crane or vulture; and, as a finishing touch, to withstand rain, they were coated with beeswax, previously heated.

In matters of dress, I relied on khaki shorts, shirt, and coat; when extra warmth was desired, a Harris homespun tweed coat solved the situation. For protection to the face, I was at a disadvantage; while the scourging winds played havoc with my skin, which was nothing new, and it was looked upon as a foregone conclusion. Had higher altitudes been reached, I should certainly not have demurred to smear my face, if not my knees, with pig-blood and tallow, in accordance to Tibetan custom, to mitigate this painful discomfort—to me, the sorest trial, everything considered. Fortunately to be so regarded for only a periodic duration; yet never have I found a suitable lotion in pharmacy that will *toughen* the skin; and frequent application of iodine must have produced a lurid effect, but little amelioration from pain. "The wind has teeth, the wind has claws. . . . It seems a scythe, it seems a rod." A pith topi answered other purposes than mere protection from the sun. Well supplied with pins, it served as a store-box for insects, and, at times, as a receptacle for small birds or mammals when hands were otherwise employed. I used three pairs of wide-fitting boots with rubber-composition soles; and, as a change from constant wet feet, an additional pair of rubber boots. Generally, I wore two pairs of cashmere socks and always Fox puttees, which completed my personal outfit. My heaviest weapon was an Ithaca 20-bore shot-gun, and the lightest, a .22 Browning rifle. Just as it is an axiom of sound leadership never to lose connection with one's commissariat and equipment unless under forced circumstances, so it is in regard to one's health and comfort, in that as much, or more, bedding is required below than above; and, though a folding camp-stretcher will not always keep one free from vermin, a ground-sheet to enclose all is essential as a protection from wet and vermin, when subject to coolie transport in Eastern countries. My bedding comprised a varied assortment, from a khaki sheet above to a white one below (obviously thus placed), a crude blanket from Nepal, other *durries* and rugs from India and Burma; if an Assam muga silk quilt gave every ounce its weight in warmth, I was never really snug at exposed altitudes until the King of Muli presented me with a diversely coloured, lama-woven, woollen rug, later on.

All the available cotton-wool was purchased, and I must

have depleted the several shops wherever each held a small supply in stock. It was a curiously mixed, light, if bulky load that left by the pack-pony from Likiang. Money in coin had to be distributed among my locked cases for safety, and to equalize the loads.

My Nashi boys having gained an insight into a task which would develop by experience, so that a start could be made, I walked in for the first and last time since leaving Likiang to make my purchases and to notify the magistrate of my intention to depart on my next, long journey. Arrived there, at his request I waited another day for my credentials to be prepared, but I left the following day on the understanding that I should receive them at the village by special messenger. The same evening a youth of mixed Chinese and Nashi parentage, by name Hsuen Ming-sän, beseeched me to engage him, while Aziza pleaded his cause. Although not too favourably impressed, in appearance partaking of 'the all-knowing type', and my helpers more than complete in number, but, as he was conversant with a modicum of Hindustani, the only language the three of us had in common, I decided to engage him, fortunate for him that he could not speak English.¹

¹ Seasoned travellers to the East are often beset with a difficulty in having to decide quickly on a personal servant of the right calibre when testimonials, and sometimes recommendations, are valueless. Who is there that has not experienced the ignominy of a larceny or wholesale theft in the loss of wrist-watch, silver cigarette-case, and even ties and coloured sweater by the knut, with brazen effrontery, who frequently displays a fountain-pen and wrist-watch, very likely as not, stolen, though he may not be in your employ. Such an advanced youth occurs in China as elsewhere, and he is rapidly developing, far and wide, in the remote corners of the East. Further, while on this topic: Do not think that because your pal has that boy; one who seldom—I hesitate to say, never—takes advantage of his position (the better, the boy: the bigger, the rogue—a paradox which is frequently true) that he will perform his duties with the same enthusiastic regard for your welfare. Your pal may follow the broad line of least resistance. However it depends on circumstances, your firmness, avoidance of undue familiarity—invariably taken advantage of—and consideration of his interests. You will be lucky if, having survived the 'trying-you-out' preliminaries, your charge escapes the inevitable *inflatio capitis*, complicated by all the symptoms of *pedes frigidi*. We, in the West, have brought upon ourselves more trouble by an over-generous impartation of our discoveries in tropical produce and mechanical inventions, by a costly dissemination of spurious education, combined with the pernicious film in cinemas, and, of more infinite harm, the lack of moral courage to say 'No', than by all the mistakes of the past. No people will be kept in ignorance indefinitely; but, is it ignorance where a religion or a code of ethics prevails that has stood the test from time immemorial, which cannot be summarily dispensed with without violent repercussions? Just as the individual gains

Ming-sän had acquired his Hindustani in childhood when Tibet was overrun by Chinese in the then unsettled state of the country, when the Dalai Lama sought refuge in Darjeeling (1910), and, returning to power two years later, many Chinese merchants drifted to Calcutta. He had been present when Dr. Shelton, an American missionary, lost his life by Tibetan marauders; this youth proved a useful servant, and at times he was invaluable.

News from the outer world takes a long time to reach the far west of China, but local gossip often spreads rapidly by inexplicable means. Thus, when the death—by treachery, the usual procedure—of a notorious inhuman and bloodthirsty bandit reached the village, it was a matter of universal gratification at his good riddance. At midnight, a message reached me from the magistrate, with a covering note from Mr Andrews, to the effect that: "Tibetan robbers are on your road and at Yungning 100 strong . . . until the way is clear I think it will be best for you to wait a day or so, because they are a very wicked lot and they will show no mercy. . . ." As I considered my obligatory courtesies had been correctly performed, I did not give the desired guarantee, absolving the magistrate from all responsibility in the event of my going, as I had no wish to create a precedent and perhaps assist marauders. So, placing the situation before my head-muleteer, we decided 'to take the road' and, as for me, damn the consequences! In this, I disregarded the advice of 'the man on the spot'! One of my Nashi preparators gave a weak excuse for not accompanying us at the last moment that, as I suspected, proved to be a palpable lie; he turned up in Tachienlu in due course with another master.

At our midday halt we rested near a small water-hole, barely sufficient to satisfy a single, thirsty mule, on a portion of the plain, sterile, and lava-strewn, interspersed with thorny shrubs. The trail ran parallel to the mountain-mass at the requisite distance to afford a panoramic view of its extent and proportion. The peak of Ginalakö now came into promin-

knowledge through experience in the everyday walk of life, which being self-attained is valued, so with nations working out their own salvation. Assuredly, one of the secrets, possibly the most important, of Holland's success in colonization is its non-commitment to the Dutch language in dealing with native subjects. Not that any one Western nation has the prerogative of sanity, or insanity!

ence. A connected group or chain of inaccessible, deep troughs, overgrown with vegetation, so rare a natural phenomenon, if valleys in miniature, suffered none the less in its attractiveness. A wide, expansive, prairie-like area intervened, almost imperceptibly sloping in descent towards the abruptly rising, snow-clad mountain range, not away from as seemingly to be expected. At this unusual peculiarity I held my gaze, lest deceived by an optical illusion. Farther on there appeared a small sheet of water, on whose surface floated two, large parties of teal and duck in peaceful tranquillity.

The endless variety in the physical features of the country was enhanced by the wealth of vegetation, prominent in pine, larch, and rhododendron. With this diversity surrounding, camp was pitched on a level stretch of ground, interspersed with scrub and enclosed by forest, alongside the wide bed of a shallow stream in indiscernible flow which had its source in a towering glacier, straight ahead. The silence of the night was broken, only by inexplicable sounds—the secrets of the forest's depth—when ever and anon the hooting of a Wood Owl,¹ as if in demoniacal defiance of the serenity, held sway. Even the muleteers seemed awed in slumber. As the smoke from crackling camp-fire rose with phantom wreath in the keen, dry air, was ever a repose more delightful than mine in full view of the starry heavens!

Wooded glens were intersected by gushing torrents. In one nook, I detected a pair of rare, tiny Long-tailed Tits² weaving with moss and lichen the final touches to an abode, in the fork of a tree, on ragged bark, with such ingenuity that where nest and bark united it was impossible to define; of the perfection was their art, so exquisitely blended and concealed in harmony.

We were now traversing the Yangtse Big Bend, a spur of elevated land that is the cause of a deviation in this river to the extent of over two hundred miles. A stage in my journey that took six and a half days; and, until the long descent to the mighty river was reached, along a trail with situations over hollow, gully, and ridge, at altitudes between 10,500-

¹ *Strix aluco nivicola* (Blyth).

² *Aegithaliscus caudatus vinaceus* (Verr.). Previously collected among the conifers north of Ngulukö where *Aegithaliscus bonvaloti* (Oust.) was the most plentiful, both of which tits were always only in pairs.

12,500 feet, though the summits were considerably higher. Never was a house seen, when we would camp either in the forest, or on a small meadow, but recognized by name to the muleteers. While the conifer forests were, at times, devoid of animal and bird life for miles at a stretch, eerie in silence. The open nature of the park-like country, interspersed with isolated patches of conifers, devoid of undergrowth, through which one could wander far afield, was superseded by the heavier, conifer forests where, in the gently shelving hollows, stood the grandest trees. On a soil, so deep and rich, an occasional clearance, set apart for scanty, maize cultivation, accounted for a sad spectacle, with the whole ground strewn with what was once valuable timber, left to decay and rot, if unburnt.

Associated with this habitat amongst the pines was a Marsh Tit,¹ with Crested-tits,² Rosefinches,³ Yuhinas,⁴ Tree-creepers,⁵ a Crossbill,⁶ a Bullfinch,⁷ a Nuthatch⁸ and a Goldcrest⁹—to mention but a few of the smaller birds—where a Nutcracker,¹⁰ and the Paraquet,¹¹ added their quota of raucous cries to the twittering of various, minute warblers, only discernible by movement amid the foliage of the lofty trees, until a fall of snow would cause them to move nearer to the ground. Of woodpeckers, the only one observed was the Three-toed,¹² represented in very few museums. In a hollow rang out a loud cry that could have been produced only by an arboreal frog, probably of no large size, but of remarkable vocal power; when I was completely baffled, hearing this strange call at such a high altitude.

Conspicuous in the rear of a drawn-out cortège and train of pack-animals were my two largest, clean-planed boxes on the back of the carriers. Rhododendron in bloom, pink in

¹ *Parus palustris dejeani* Oust. ² *Parus rufonuchalis beavani* (Jerd.).

Parus ater amodius Hodgs. *Parus dichrous wellsii* Baker.

³ *Erythrina thura feminina* (Rippon). *Erythrina pulcherrima argyrophrys* (Berlioz).

⁴ *Yuhina diademata diademata* (Verr.). *Yuhina occipitalis obscurior* Roths.

⁵ *Certhia himalayensis yunnanensis* Sharpe. *Certhia familiaris khamensis* Bianchi. (Rare).

⁶ *Loxia curvirostra himalayensis* Blyth.

⁷ *Pyrrhula erythaca altera* Rippon. ⁸ *Sitta yunnanensis* Grant.

⁹ *Regulus regulus yunnanensis* Rippon.

¹⁰ *Nucifraga caryocatactes macella* Thayer & Bangs.

¹¹ *Psittacula derbyana* (Fraser).

¹² *Picoides tridactylus junebris* Verr.

a delicate tint, adorned the foreground, heightened by the dark green foliage of the pines on surrounding slopes. No reply was given when hailed by some occupants of several caves ; and, as they moved out to intercept us on the march, it was considered advisable not to lag.

With the exception of two Squirrels,¹ one of which was a delicately striped, small species,² rarely seen, mammals were scarce ; yet, when I managed to set traps, seldom was I disappointed ; and, now, a Pica or Mouse-hare,³ a dainty rodent like a guinea-pig in form, without tail, and with fur, thick and soft, was obtained for the first time at ten thousand seven hundred feet.

At nightfall, a faint glow from the embers of a camp-fire, beyond the intersecting ravine, caused my head-muleteer to let bang a couple of shots—never wasted unnecessarily on the invisible—from his muzzle-loader, without any response by voice or movement, and possibly we were deceived by luminous twigs. After the echoes had died down a deathly silence prevailed. The mules could be seen next morning in the most inaccessible places where no muleteer would venture, and only stone-throwing, combined with much shouting, to which latter commands the mules respond, could dislodge them ; but without unnecessary delay, all were floundering up the rugged and slippery bank to regain the trail.

At every turn or undulation would appear valley after valley, and ridge upon ridge, unless blocked to view by the forested slopes of some protruding eminence, yet without a vestige of a clue to the whereabouts of the river ! Of a truth, a land of deep erosion ! After a day of steady-falling snow and bitter cold, on arrival at the Lolo hamlet of Lot-solu, my tent was pitched for the first time since leaving Bhamo.

Sunbirds,⁴ with the males in resplendent colours of crimson, blue, and yellow, were probing the blossom of the peach trees throughout a deep ravine, where a warmer atmosphere prevailed, which was in occupancy by a varied, feathered throng ; while in the bed of a torrent a diminutive black and white Forktail⁵ with tail, so short, in incessant movement ; and a

¹ The larger, *Dremomys pernyi griselda* Thomas.

² *Tamiops swinhoei clarkei* Thomas. ³ *Ochotona thibetana zappeyi* Thomas.

⁴ *Aethopyga dabryi* (Verr.). ⁵ *Microcichla scouleri* (Vig.).

White-breasted Dipper¹ had each their allotted territory. A Wren² divided its attention between the crannies and the rough-hewn slabs, surmounting a wall, where another must have lurked.

Almost vertical, a thick stratum of rock lay embedded in the face of an opposing mountain; while strata, abruptly terminated by faults, appeared at less acute angles within our reach—a proof of an All-Powerful Force during a remote aeon. The trail, a mere foot and a half in width, skirted the loose screes overlooking the awful chasm; when, at one bend, which might well be designated 'Sensation Point', the secret Yangtse Kiang³ was sighted in three patches of vivid blue, changing in colour with kaleidoscopic effect, as the clouds obscured the sun, momentarily to assume its normal, drab, muddy hue. Too late to reach its bank and cross the same evening, we decided to camp beyond the village of Fengkou on an exposed flat, and scarcely had the tents been erected when a blast of wind tore all the pegs out of the ground, and cotton-wool, papers, with other articles, were undergoing a diffusion in dispersal beyond recovery. Pigtailed were in evidence where few had been obvious before.

On the descent, Crag Martins⁴ once more appeared, when the third specimen was secured. With more than ample payment promised, had a firm stand not been taken, the ferryman would have 'squeezed' me in his demand out of all proportion to the customary charge, which would have led to outrageous impositions later. The crossing proved a long and tedious task; obstreperous mules jibbed at having to jump into a craft where only a very limited number could be packed. Baling water that penetrated the porous planks at an alarming rate added to the uncertainty of a situation in its contingency. Nevertheless after several crossings this feat was accomplished without mishap.

Whence a barren stretch intervened, and all baggage was deposited at the house of my head-muleteer; the guest chamber on the upper floor was allotted to me, but the fresh air, more easily obtained on the veranda, now swept, appealed to me as more attractive. I made out the altitude of this hamlet, Lakashili, to be 5,400 feet or about 300 feet above the ferry.

¹ *Cinclus cinclus beicki* Meise.

² *Nannus troglodytes talifuensis* (Sharpe).

³ Pronounced Yang-dz Jang.

⁴ *Riparia rupestris* (Scop.).

Distributing a few nicknacks, comprised of mirrors and combs, scissors, safety-pins, &c., to the children, when a pathetic incident would be the outcome, as the outstretched, recumbent figure of a disappointed urchin, supplicating his appeal with the hands, was ample proof that pleasure could be imparted by simple gifts. Pipes were always in demand by older members of the community, and my stock was soon depleted. To obtain a pipeful of 'my brand' was of more frequency, and it went a long way to establish friendly relations with the natives at several, wayside halts.

We commenced an immediate, abrupt ascent, with a scoured water-worn surface. Discarded grass-sandals littered the trail, significant of many a weary climb, and some indication of the travellers who had utilized it. Reaching an altitude of 8,200 feet, two females of a Red-headed Tit¹ and a Copper² butterfly were obtained that were not met with again. Caution was necessary in crossing the gravelly scree, liable to slip and already moving, before the last ascent to a hamlet, by name, Aowah, below the col of 9,000 feet.

A delightful stretch of valley scenery was enjoyed on the following day, richly wooded, with picturesque houses, shingle-roofed, weighted with stones to counteract the force of raging winds. Dotted over the landscape, peach trees in blossom yielded many a tiny, streaked and spotted butterfly,³ with the aid of a long-handled net. My lunch was impaired in flavour by Laoyang, Aziza's helpmate, whose barbarous but well-intentioned, if primitive, method had caught my eye, as the potatoes, cooked but cold, were undergoing a nail paring and handling. This would have preferably been done by myself in the usual civilized manner—my peck of dirt must have reached a bushel long before now! Another more prolonged and equally abrupt rise continued through magnificent forest to the crown of the divide at 11,500 ft., with the precipitous flanks of a mountain, considerably higher, to the immediate west; with a vista of the Yungning Plain, like a 'Promised Land', on the descent. I traversed

¹ *Aegithaliscus concinnus talifuensis* Rippon.

² *Chrysophanus ouang* Oberth., a male, having obtained a female on March 14. This rare species was previously only known from Tsekou in the Mekong valley. Several specimens were taken in the same quarter of another 'Copper', *Chrysophanus li* Oberth., widely distributed.

³ *Dodona durga sinica* Mengel.

several 'short cuts' down this mountain when, should a mule be in the proximity, it would sometimes follow, but more frequently it hesitated to strike a trail, which might lead to a jam in getting past the trees, laden; and in this trait it showed sagacity.

A vacant, dilapidated house, stacked inside with timber, was recommended by the abbot (*tsungkuan*) of the lamasery, to which we repaired, as it was not considered safe to camp outside owing to the prevalence of thieves, who were said to be active. In the morning I was honoured by a visit from the abbot and the vice-abbot (*arshen*) with several retainers. The abbot was a thick-set man, about forty-five years of age—a typical jovial monk—and like all his retinue had an intense interest in my firearms. He preferred to stand rather than trust his weight upon, what appeared to him, my much too flimsy chair, until reassured that there was no cause for anxiety. Cognizant of the situation, he might have spared himself the reiterated apology for allowing me to use these bug-ridden quarters, which however suited my purpose better than the lamasery. To show my friendliness, I promised him my .22 automatic rifle on which he had set his heart, once my work was terminated. Shortly afterwards I returned his call when, treating me with every respect and courtesy, which his restricted outlook and limited resources would allow, he desired me to accept his hospitality at his retreat (said to be overrun with rats—the better for me!) in the centre of the Latakhü lake. Surrounded by undulating, wooded hills, offset at its western end by a bluff of ruggedness, lay this sheet of unruffled water of indescribable colouring in the glorious sunshine, studded with a few, wooded islands whereon the centre tiny islet of Nyorophu stood the lamasery, some nine miles away at 9,600 feet in altitude, and about 1,000 feet above the Yungning Plain. This plain had every appearance of a lake-bed at some remote period.

Cranes, acute of sight in serried array, mostly Black-necked,¹ with a sprinkling of a smaller, paler coloured one,² stalked over its vast expanse and rudely cultivated tracts, with measured tread. While a stream, meandering through, was frequented by the Spotbill,³ and Goosander.⁴ One of my

¹ *Megalornis nigricollis* (Przew.). ² *Megalornis leucogeranus* (Pall.).

³ Possibly *Anas pæcilorhyncha zonorhyncha* Swinh.

⁴ *Mergus merganser orientalis* Gould.

favourite excursions was to a narrow, wooded valley, totally unoccupied except for a single family of outcasts or marauders, who occupied a commodious cave on its northern slopes. Here, the Red-bellied Squirrel,¹ in another form occurred, previously seen on the last occasion to the south of Likiang. I was to meet with it from start to finish in my long journey from Bhamo to Omeishan, but not without numerous gaps in distribution; while higher altitudes produced another species. From one specimen of the present form forty to fifty fleas were obtained, and quite as many were lost, yet without any apparent loss in condition, as all weights of mammal specimens were checked by scale. This crowding of the parasite most likely had some relation to the paucity of these squirrels in this area of distribution.

Collecting² proceeded apace; and, almost daily, passing by the *yamen* or magistrate's residence, I became familiar with the huge dragon³ depicted in ferocious aspect of tooth and claw on a whitewashed piece of masonry.

Visiting-cards must be as old as the hills in China. When accompanied by acceptable gifts of meal, they are, at all events, capable of being put to a more useful purpose, particularly when a number of mouths, both animal and human, have to be fed; with the addition of a few oranges and walnuts, such gifts are all the more appreciated. But what was to be done with a black, polled goat⁴ that was tethered alongside?

¹ *Callosciurus erythræus gloveri* Thomas.

² The butterfly, *Thanaos montanus nigrescens* Leech, was taken for the first occasions on March 21 and 25.

³ "Buddhism also has completely conformed to the national spirit, and is now a curious blend of Hindu metaphysics with the primitive Chinese belief in spirits and a deified ancestry. Thus the old animism is still manifest in a multitude of superstitious practices, which aim at beguiling the bad and securing the favour of the good spirits. Everything depends on maintaining a perfect balance between the two principles represented by the 'White Tiger' and the 'Azure Dragon', who guard the approaches of every dwelling, and whose opposing influences have to be nicely adjusted by the well-paid professors of the magic arts (*The World's Peoples* 1908. Dr A. H. Keane.).

⁴ Notwithstanding the amelioration of pain to the lower animals, which has been the outcome of our beneficial rule in India and other Eastern countries, much remains to be done for want of the moral courage to act. When such crude and diabolical methods of slaughter are allowed to be inflicted in public places on this, and other animals, showing a mortal dread of blood, one shudders to think what happens, unseen; and to what a state of retrogression the people would revert without the Ruling Hand's Supervision. Indifference to unnecessary suffering is equal proof of participation; and no amount of shelving distasteful duties will exonerate us from our moral obligation to right this wrong, which has been allowed to prevail far too long.

Assuredly, it meant another mouth to be fed ; yet, so fickle are the contradictions of human nature, as my life had been spared, some compassion for a lower animal at my mercy would not be amiss ! Saved from Aziza's knife now, nevertheless as time advanced the wrench would be all the more severely felt. Why not a mascot to our caravan ? Strange to its new environment, and stranger still in my presence, as if it realized its life was in the balance, after the first few days, when it had more often than not to be dragged when led, it came to recognize my voice, and it took its place with the rest of my retinue—a little hero on trail—to meet with many vicissitudes and a tragic end !

My time was short if I was ever to reach Tachienlu on an indefinite date before the rest of our party would leave.

Whilst the pig is occasionally fed for ulterior motives, the dog is merely looked upon in China, if not Tibet, as a scavenger, and, in consequence, rarely or never fed. I was not prepared, however, for the systematic and perfected method employed by the owner of the house, directly in my line of sight, towards his first-born son, whose nursery, morning toilet might have been more discreetly removed by an ablution : but indolence stops at nothing ! The suspicious character, warned off the premises, absented himself none too soon ; others there were whose attentions we would have cheerfully dispensed with. By appointment the *arshen*, accompanied by several enthusiasts, arrived when rifle practice took place within the walled enclosure, showing ample proof that my small-bore weapons were capable of adequate penetration to their satisfaction.

After a final interview at the lamasery, when Ming-sän acted his rôle of interpreter, the *tsungkuan* pressed me to accept a German rifle, serviceable, apart from its age, but altogether too heavy for my liking. The lamas turned out *en masse* to witness our departure. Half a mile had been covered when Aziza beckoned me with an inquiry from the abbot, couched in such terms as, if I wanted an escort, he would be pleased to send one. Thanking him, I replied that it would be in order, either one way or another, and for the first time I availed myself of this protection.

My muleteers with a few changes were the same men of

the last stage. True to their word, they had arrived on the appointed day, having come from Lakashili on the Yangtse. Insignificant trifles, which are apt to develop into grievances, can often be remedied by a mutual understanding, which can only be reached by a moderately long acquaintance; while short time assistance often means that the same or similar difficulty crops up with each, fresh arrival; and, for this reason, I chose always to retain the services of a willing helper, if at all possible.

It was a short march to Jhayshuitha or the place of the hot springs. A Rock Dove,¹ few in number, the progenitor of the domestic pigeon in the East, flew about the perpendicular face of some adjacent crags. When at Ngulukö, an immature Goshawk,² trained for falconry, had been brought for my inspection, which did not interest me further, and on which the owner certainly would have set too high a value, had he been disposed to sell. A Lolo now brought in a Shahin Falcon,³ a female, in the striped phase of plumage; and, in spite of his humble position, showed me a respect and gratitude for the money offered that I recalled him to increase the reward. However, it must have been more injured than I suspected; with the jolting on the march and refusal of food, it succumbed, to my regret, two days later. As there was a remote chance of its survival, I had looked forward to some success, though it would, as it happened, have been more merciful to have put it out of misery.

My Nashis took advantage of the deep pool through which flowed hot, clean water from the sulphur springs, well patronized by the villagers of both sexes in nature's garb, unabashed. Some interesting frogs also frequented this unusual, attractive resort, but they left to find a place in my formaline tank.

For some considerable distance the trail continued over level ground, again to rise through well-forested country, with a descent to our midday halt at a small hamlet (Lidjazah) only three hundred feet above our last camp. A jungle-fire was raging on an adjacent hill, enveloping the surrounding country in thick smoke. As a number of birds had been

¹ *Columba rupestris rupestris* Pall. ² *Astur gentilis khamensis* Bianc.

³ *Falco peregrinus peregrinator* Sundev.

obtained, a proportion were prepared in the time, available ; but not without the loss of scalpels, carelessly forgotten.

We had only just fixed on our camp when two Lolos were seen to be rushing down upon us, with the news that robbers were near at hand, when a partial guard and my boys promptly made a feint ; whoever they were, no one was visible. Instructing Aziza to give the Lolo villagers as much salt as he could spare for an offer of potatoes, after an examination of the subterranean cavity into which the stream disappeared, I settled down on my stretcher, with the star-lit heavens overhead : a cold night, but no hardship, provided no snow fell.

I doubt that I have ever seen dirtier or worse-clothed people than this particular group of Lolos, though they were not without possessions, in both cattle and sheep. My escort was comprised of local levies, whose leader showed a sportsman's interest in natural objects. Next morning, when requested by my head-muleteer to make a demonstration against an anticipated attack, they acquitted themselves creditably in extended line on the elevated, wooded flank to our left. Nearing the Szechwan frontier, a rich, loamy soil was in evidence, given up to maize cultivation, on a shelving lay of land where the stately trees of the surrounding forest were a certain proof of the depth of a rich humus. The stream, effectively spanned by an artistic structure, composed of trunk lengths, separating the two provinces, was crossed. Reaching our midday halt, I paid off the escort, who were not at liberty to go farther, when they left with regret at parting, showing their gratitude for the remuneration.



(Upper) "SUCH WERE THE TYPES IN OCCUPATION OF THE MARKET-PLACE." P. 39.

(Lower) "HIS DAUGHTER LEADS THE HARDY, LITTLE BULLOCKS AS THE RUDE, IRON SHARE IS GUIDED, SCRAPING A SHALLOW FURROW, WHERE MUCH IS LEFT TO CHANCE." P. 43.

CHAPTER III

THROUGH THE LAND OF THE LAMAS

THE trail rose and dipped into delightfully wooded and watered dells, overlooked by rocky eminences, fringed by deep pockets below. Then commenced the stiff ascent of Mount Gibboh. Before arriving at our evening's halting place, a herd of yak, in number some twenty odd, were detected slowly moving over open ground where precipitous mountain and abysmal valley were clothed with a lavish growth of conifers, some four thousand feet above on a spur. Although studiously observed, it left me in complete ignorance how they came to be there; while I placed little reliance on the muleteers' statement that they were not a domestic herd, neither were they (*Budorcas*) takin.

Our camping site was a mere ledge, with barely sufficient ground to hold ourselves and the loads. Anticipating marauders, some of the muleteers accompanied the mules down the mountain-side to a feeding ground, where they remained in touch by sound of voice throughout the night. I took stock of our surroundings. A *simulium*—a minute blood-sucking fly—attacked my knees, familiar to me farther west at low and moderate altitudes; here, we were at an elevation of 12,000 feet! A cluster of gigantic firs¹ within easy distance, of those measured, several reached three span-lengths of my extended arms, or 16½ feet in girth, at 4½ feet from the base, which would give over 5 feet in diameter, and—stupendous in height. Not excessively proportioned, if compared with many, known, superb giants, similar to those on the Pacific side of North America; yet, in full vigour of life—a calamity if ever destroyed, unseen by others, appreciative of Nature's

¹ Johnston curiously makes mention of "many magnificent firs, some of them measured 15 feet in circumference, 5 feet from the ground." I believe his reference is to this identical spot.

majesty and solemnity ! To the south, the snow-clad peaks of the Likiang Range were visible to the naked eye, like a tiny protuberance, over eighty miles distant on the horizon. From this commanding view-point the scene resembled a billowy ocean, miraculously come to rest. What a National Park and Sanctuary !

My meal, ended, one of the muleteers begged the picking of the fowl's bones, as it was his wont, to supplement his frugal fare.

Ice coated the rocky surface of the trail ; the mules slipped and scrambled with many a fall to gain the summit, deep in snow-drifts—difficulties, accentuated by another scare of marauders unseen, above. I found we had risen 2,200 feet, and were now at an altitude of 14,200 feet. This morning's going was unusually severe on the mules and everyone else, but by noon we had dropped into a gully. The sun was shining brightly ; numbers of butterflies had been obtained, including specimens of a tortoiseshell¹ and two species of skipper.²

On a resumption, birches, with silvery bark, hanging raggedly in long flakes, would appear at brief intervals ; while masses of rhododendron in flower, pink to maroon, cast a wave of brilliance over many a slope and hollow. Evening found us at a clearance in forest, with a wide expansive view to the north, whereon the restricted terrace of a distant, rugged, forested mountain was perched the walled lamasery and dwellings, like a mediaeval castle, of Muli.

The muleteers had been pushing on since our descent and crossing of the stream (Rong chu), and my time had been taken up with a stoat,³ disporting in the bed of a dry water-course. So that, when hailed to stop at a most promising camping-place near the last house on this side of the lamasery, and beside a well-wooded gully, their surprise was expressed at my wishing to stay after so short a distance traversed. I had, nevertheless, repeatedly scanned the country on the look-out for suitable collecting-ground rather than utilize the environs of the lamasery. As soon as they understood that half a day meant a whole day's pay, everybody was satisfied, and though I could not give them a definite date

¹ *Polygonia c-album* L.

² *Hesperia oberthuri* Leech. *Pamphila pulchra* Leech.

³ Evidently *Mustela sibirica moupinensis* M.-E.

for my departure, if this could have been arranged, they would have again gladly returned from their village on the Yangtse to accede to any request in reason. I had a most profitable stay at this camp under canvas ; while the advent of a warm spell of weather, and the absence of devastating winds at higher and more exposed altitudes, proved a pleasant relief.

My retreat was soon revealed. With the arrival of one of the head-lamas, who brought the white, silk scarf, a substitute for a visiting-card, and a token of friendship, I was requested to visit the King, who was now in residence at Kulu, some three days' journey distant. At the same time, I was informed that no assistance could be expected unless this request was complied with. I was adamant to move until it suited my convenience, though perfectly willing to do as they wished then. This was always my answer on further visits from this Lama and others.

The loud, metallic-sounding bellow of a stag Sámbar¹ would resound from the heights above, frequently after dusk, and continued throughout the night. The arrival of the summer migrants brought many a well-recognized call to memory, inclusive of the little Emerald Cuckoo,² with glossy green and golden-bronze head and back in the male ; and one of the brain-fever birds, a large Hawk Cuckoo,³ which promptly poured forth its melodious, high-pitched volume of sound ; while less obtrusive Flycatchers⁴ and Warblers,⁵ with a Sibia,⁶ and an interesting Bulbul,⁷ rendered additional colour and movement to the numerous residents, comprising Laughing-thrushes⁸ and Babblers,⁹ not lacking in similar characteristics. Surrounding vegetation was frequented by a roving com-

¹ *Rusa unicolor dejeani* Pous. ² *Chalcites maculatus* (Gm.).

³ *Hierococcyx sparverioides* Vig.

⁴ *Siphia strophciata strophciata* Hodgs. *Rhipidura albicollis albicollis* (Vieill.).

⁵ *Phylloscopus reguloides claudiaæ* (La Touche). *Phylloscopus maculipennis debilis* (Thayer & Bangs).

⁶ *Leioptila desgodinsi* (Dav. & Oust.).

⁷ *Spizixus canifrons ingrani* Bangs & Phillips.

⁸ *Garrulax sannio* Swinh. Met with again at Suifu on completion of my journey, but nowhere in the intervening area. *Garrulax ellioti ellioti* (Verr.). *Garrulax affinis oustaleti* (Hart.).

Garrulax cineracea styani (Oust.). All these Laughing-thrushes are strictly resident and not migrants. The deep valleys furnish the requisite environment.

⁹ *Pomatorhinus ruficollis similis* Roths. *Fulvetta ruficapilla sordidior* (Rippon). *Alcippornis nipalensis yunnanensis* Har. *Schoeniparus dubius genestieri* Oust.

munity of Crow-tits,¹ restless, fluffy-feathered objects of my admiration ; where unobtrusively lurked a Hedge Sparrow,² never far above the ground. The Lady Amherst Pheasant,³—with the male in resplendent, black-tipped, silver cape ; blackish, bronze-green head, adorned with blood-red crest ; white breast, and tail three feet in length—,trod the densest thickets, interspersed with a rhododendron in a blaze of delicious pink bloom. What rapture of delight it gave me—the first glimpse of this shy, gorgeous bird at home *in its natural haunts* ! Pheasants in general seldom fly, as, in their localized habitat, they frequent the densest undergrowth ; thus, when two cock Lady Amherst Pheasants rose clear from the tops of the trees in the intense sunlight, on this occasion they must have been disturbed by a predatory mammal. This rare event gave me a vista of beauty and grace that few have been privileged to see !

All natives rely on snaring pheasants for their capture, and the local shikari (the one and only snarer, however, met with during my journey) duly appeared to make my acquaintance. He proved, as I anticipated, to have an extraordinary knowledge of wood-craft. The slightest sound, should it be either the faintest call or a rustle of leaves, would attract his attention ; seldom did he mistake the true cause of its occurrence. In setting his snares, he employed a running noose of plaited bark, as wire or manufactured cord was unknown to him, and, if it had been, it would have been spurned as utterly useless to catch such a suspicious quarry. A sapling, bent on tension, answered for a fulcrum ; the noose was buried on a run, over which finely-shaved supports of bamboo or twig served to retain the dead leaves, among which and along the run a few grains of maize had been strewn, to await the next pheasant, which came that way to scratch the ground. (In other parts of the East, pheasants and partridges are generally snared by the neck, often with a horsehair noose in an opening of a roughly improvised barricade, when the inherent trait in all these ground-birds is to rush madly forward : the victim strangles itself, by tightening the slip-knot with its own frantic endeavours to be free.) I was pleased for him to accompany me as he took the same keen interest

¹ *Suthora styani ricketti* (Roths.). ² *Prunella strophiatea multistriata* (Dav.).

³ *Chrysolophus amherstiae* (Lead.).

when a pheasant might be obtained, unawares, in the early morning or at sundown when at water. At his instigation, I had played a prank on the boys on my return to camp, under the pretence of my having only an empty bag ; later, to remove a hen pheasant from under my coat. It was my turn to play the same prank on him when, singularly, I picked up a hen pheasant on one of the runs that showed no sign of its having been noosed, but most likely it had been in the first instance, unless it had died from a stray shot and not from shock ; he was equal to the occasion, since he protested that it was his rightful trophy, which was not questioned, and he duly received his reward. When the time came for me to leave, our mutual regret was a genuine expression of sympathy ; moreover, I regarded him as one of Nature's gentlefolks.

There was little trace of other game, except once, when a faint sound of feet denoted a patrolling in the bed of the torrent, yet it gave no clue to the identity of the occupant. I was fortunate to secure an adult Pygmy Pied Woodpecker¹ on April 4, the first record for Szechwan, also, for my first time meeting with the Greater Spotted Woodpecker.² Several interesting butterflies³ were taken at this camp.

Truculent in attitude, a burly Tibetan made himself a nuisance ; and, finally, he made a snatch at some of my papers, summarily to receive a well-earned reproof that he was not to show his face again, if he valued his life. Otherwise, I suffered no further inconvenience from wandering malefactors, whose interference the lamas had feared, as they had continually endeavoured to instil their warning.

On the appointed day to strike camp, mules and carriers arrived from the lamasery, some five miles distant, and I

¹ *Dryobates semicoronatus omissus* Roths.

² *Dryobates major stresemanni* Rensch.

³ *Dercas lycorias* Dbly. Two specimens only, April 5, 6, met with nowhere else. *Leucochloë daplidice* L. *Neptis mahendra extensa* Leech. *Araschnia burejana* Brem. Thirteen specimens obtained only at this locality. *Helio-phorus (Ilerda) tamu eventa* Fruhst. No less than twenty-two specimens, both females and males, were taken between March 27 and April 11 of the spring brood of this form represented in the B.M. by two specimens from the Oberthür collection. *Chrysophanus li* Oberth. Many were taken at this camp. *Chrysophanus lilacina* Oberth. (April 7). Represented by two specimens in the B.M. (Oberthür coll.). *Polyommatus boeticus* L. *Zizera mahe opalina* Pouj. *Everes argiades hellotia* Mén. *Lycæna lanty* Oberth. In numbers. *Lycænopsis (Cyaniris) argiolus* L. *Lycænopsis orcas* Leech. *Lycænopsis hersilia* Leech (March 27). *Hesperia oberthuri* Leech. *Hesperia maculatus tibetanus* Oberth.

was duly installed in the guest-house within the expansive compound, after much bowing and open-hand demonstration of greeting. I had been sensitive to the subtleties of debate at a previous interview with the acting head-lamas, three in number, in the King's absence, after gaining a seat of honour in the dark confines of an inner sanctum, when I and my movements were under discussion; and, surmising what was passing between the shrewd lamas and Ming-sän, I had to put him on his guard, lest he should inveigle me into a promise which could not be fulfilled. Any uncertainty which may have existed seemed now, however, amicably dispelled. Food had been brought, when I drank the unboiled milk to the accompaniment of a silent prayer. The customary gifts for which I believe in paying came in meal, and, on this occasion, in bacon, also. But I certainly draw the line at maggoty bacon, even as a gift, and rather than others should run the risk of its baneful effects, Aziza, unobserved, readily threw it away; though this act was regarded as sheer waste by my retinue.

Wool-frocked in dull red homespun, both elderly lamas and youthful protégés (*tra-pa*), with their garments, toned down in colour by dirt and smoke, had plenty of time on their hands, so both Aziza, cooking at his fire, and the Nashis, employed in the preparation of skins, were subject to the usual scrutiny; soon it was reported that some light-fingered thief had removed a pair of scissors, serviceable, if but a trifling relic of boyhood days. More fools they for placing temptation in the way! Honey-bees, entering an ingeniously erected and easily opened hive in the wall, were busily making the most of the fleeting hours of sunshine, in contrast to the inertia around: what has always been, it will ever be! My comfortable quarters, if overlooked by prying eyes from behind latticed windows, commanded a wide expanse of valley and mountain.

The mules, supplied, were evidently unaccustomed to such loads as mine, as a result of this averseness and a surplus of energy, one by one broke line, to career round the bare hillside as if possessed of the devil, rattling everything loose inside the packages until shorn of the whole tantalizing impediment, when the prospect resembled a confused scene of discarded equipment. At which I might well have held up my

hands in horror. A fresh start: then, the few houses, out of which children came on to the road, falling flat at my approach for baksheesh, were left; and the deep valley of the Litang, with the river, spanned by an elegant bridge of wood and stone-weighted supports, without mortar, nail, or bolt, which was crossed.

Skirting the hills on the left bank, we followed the downward course of the river when a Roller¹ or Blue Jay would flash its hues of varied blue in the sunshine, while a solitary Vulture² lazily rose from a well-picked carcass. These, and lizards, basking on the heated ground, showed every indication of an upper extension of tropical life in this, sinuous valley. Looking back, Muli, as seen from this, impressive, front view, gradually faded away in the increasing haze and distance.

There was no water for the mules at noon; they had to be content with the liquid, black mud in which was mixed the few handfuls of meal—not one refused! Salt, a cherished commodity to the community at large, to be given to mules would have been an undreamt-of waste, and never was it put to this purpose.

After many ups and downs, cross streams, and charming bits of woodland intersected by the trail, our camp was located on a flat, with no occasion to pitch tents, when a spark from Aziza's fire would have set the whole countryside alight, had not the Lama, who was never far away, and I made a quick effort to extinguish it, so dry was the scanty herbage. This Lama requested the loan of one of my guns; in shooting a rare Laughing-thrush,³ only two specimens having been obtained at my last camp, as a result of his prowess, he showed he was to some extent not above stifling his own religious qualm; I secured for the last time specimens of a Rosefinch.⁴

Prettily situated hamlets and a varied woodland continued, watered by innumerable streams, with pheasants early out and odd pairs of squirrel,⁵ already on the move. In a tract of heavy fir forest, composed of uncommonly huge trees, at the commencement of a long rise, a number of Crossbills,⁶

¹ *Coracias benghalensis affinis* McClell.

² *Aegypius monachus* (L.).

³ *Garrulax cineracea styani* (Oust.). ⁴ *Erythrura verreauxi* (Dav. & Oust.).

⁵ *Dremomys pernyi griselda* Thomas.

⁶ *Loxia curvirostra himalayensis* Blyth.

and a rare, large, handsome, male Woodpecker,¹ black with white belly and red crown, previously known only from a locality two hundred miles due west in Yunnan, were obtained.

In good time we had reached the summit at 11,200 feet, and a sharp drop of 1,000 feet ensued ; when the small lamasery of Kopadi and its outbuildings provided a brief resting-place, and an interchange of a few pithy oranges and onion-tops for cash, much to the disgust of Aziza. Ferocious dogs were particularly attentive at this lamasery.

After a sharp descent, a structure of chiselled, symmetrically proportioned stones, a creditable piece of masonry, came in view, where a gaudily coloured prayer-wheel was revolving by water-power, within, intended to be the nearest attempt to perpetual motion that could be devised. My Nashis walked round in the orthodox manner, from right to left ; meanwhile, the Lama, in meditative mood, who had incessantly mumbled the everlasting mantra, took an extra deep inhalation, and with this inspiration uppermost his prayers increased in volume, involuntarily.

My attention was taken up with mundane things along the stream, wherein frequented the Brown Dipper,² last seen at Likiang. However, my efforts were unavailing to secure this wary water-ouzel, as my retinue, not yet recovered from recent abstractions, allowed the specimen, shot on the wing, to my intense chagrin, to float downstream though the depth of water was not knee-high. This disappointment cost me some hours of wading in a treacherous stretch of its bed, as I decided to forsake the caravan, in a renewed endeavour. Leaving this stream, I traversed a subsidiary, inflowing affluent throughout a pleasing, cultivated valley ; when the trail was rejoined I broke away now to the left, within a rocky, wooded defile, where my stretcher and camp-stool were placed in such a position to obstruct all traffic, if any there should be, no other camping site being available. Delayed by the late arrival of my specimen-boxes, after setting the usual number of traps, the preparation of the day's results had to be carried on by the aid of lantern and candles. Among

¹ *Macropicus (Dryocopus) forresti* (Roths.).

² *Cinclus pallasii souliei* Oust. In February at Ngulukö, this species did not overlap in its distribution with *C. c. beicki* Meise, where both occurred sparingly at the mountain base. In this quarter the Brown Dipper was confined to the lower reaches of the streams and sluices to the south.

A solitary specimen of the butterfly, *Hysudra selira* Moore, was taken on this march, April 10, and met with nowhere else.

the few insects obtained was the Queen of Spain¹ Fritillary, for the second and last occasion.

The Lama was presented informally with my only serviceable watch, an incongruous but welcome gift, if of little monetary value, in a land where the routine of the day is entirely submissive to the sun. As we had dropped about 1,000 feet since last noon, we had a rise ahead of 4,000 feet before the summit was reached at 13,200 feet, and I had also made a wide detour on an extraneous trail. In my absence the Lama had left, proceeding in advance to advise the King and his confraternity at Kulu of our approach.

A hurried glimpse of a white rump or a white tail denoted a high-altitudinal Pheasant² where, hereabouts, the forest was separated by bare-topped slopes of an alpine character. Bitterly cold in the prospect, a tarn lay in a hollow to the left. A Kinglet or Goldcrest,³ now seen for the last time, was obtained on the overhanging foliage of some pines. On a descent, Kulu, a compact cluster of buildings, comprising lamasery and appurtenances, burst into prominence on a slight eminence within a secluded valley. On nearer approach, a crowd could be seen awaiting our arrival.

The rest had lagged behind at my attempt to defeat the cold by increased circulation, but we had some semblance to an orderly caravan on reaching the steep, short length of path. After formalities of greeting, I was shown into a room of an adjacent house, solely furnished with a straight-backed, solid chair, if small and poorly lit, it had at least been swept. More than sufficient hot rice, milk, and a few extras, with the essential chopsticks, had been considerately provided; when, bereft of onlookers, I was left to arrange my baggage in a confined space as it could be best done in the circumstances. It was snowing hard on the following day. Although more light had been obtained by removing the boards that formed the obstruction against the small orifice, a further influx of cold air could scarcely reduce the temperature, low as it was already.

¹ *Argynnis lathonia isæa* Gray. Also *Pieris melete* Mén. *Terias hecabe mandarina* Orza. *Ypthima methorina* Oberth. *Satsuma chalybea* Leech. *Heliophorus tamu eventa* Fruhst. *Polyommatus bæticus* L. *Zizera minima magna* Ruhl. *Lycæna lanty* Oberth. *Pamphila dieckmanni gemmata* Leech.

² *Lophophorus vel Ithaginis*.

³ *Regulus regulus yunnanensis* Rippon.

The Yellow-bellied Flycatcher, *Chelidorhynx hypoxanthum* (Blyth) was obtrusive in the wooded valley-bottoms on this march, April 12.

A brass tray was forthcoming, Aziza having added a cloth suitable to the occasion, on which was duly placed my monocular field-glass, tinted snow-spectacles, brandy flask (new articles), with an additional flask (unopened) of the precious fluid, and a few tins of eatables, extracted from my emergency stores (opened for the first time), which were now in transit to the King's chamber by the Lama, who had escorted us hence. In return, in due course, along with a flaming-red piece of cardboard of liberal dimensions with hieroglyphics, indecipherable to me, a supply of dried pork was of service to my Nashis, and cereals for them and also my pony. And, later, a rug was very acceptable to supplement my inadequate bedding; while the gift of a sheep would have provided all of us with a welcome change in diet, had not mutton been taboo for some, unaccountable reason to my Nashi boys, yet did for Aziza and me, particularly myself—a welcome change from the interminable, crudely roasted, tough rooster; and, further, without bread, Aziza's substitute, the unleavened *chupati* that was deplorably indigestible.

On the following day, with Aziza and Ming-sän in attendance, seats were assigned us for the interview, after introduction, and we were now in the presence of the King of Muli, supreme in power, both temporal and spiritual, who also had resumed his previous position of rest in a dignified position. Conversation opened with preliminary questions concerning the personnel of our party and the object of my task, to all of which replies the King's attendant, with due obeisance, repeated the answer after Ming-sän had interrogated me, whether already understood or not. Successively followed a number of inquiries into far-reaching discoveries in modern science, of which he had some vague conception and might wish me to be aware that he had knowledge of. "Was it possible to see through people?" Nonplussed, momentarily I thought of television, though not applicable. Could it be that this question had any connection with a desire to read the thoughts of some of his brethren? Finally, X-Rays provided the solution or, as he preferred to have it—Röntgen Rays! But when assured of its limitations I was conscious that my explanation fell short of the mark desired. He appeared to grasp my interpretation that on my return I should have encircled the world. I was concerned with immediate issues,

and required his permission before I could commence to collect. On condition that I would not shoot this day while it was snowing my request was granted, with some vague reservations, which I was certain not to abuse wilfully. This interview concluded formalities as, after viewing my guns with a covetous regard for possession of my .22 rifle, for which, had I not politely refused, he was ready there and then to notify the Abbot of Yungning that it had become his property, and a gift of cartridges from me, he left Kulu, in advance of my departure, for Kopadi lamasery, where milder conditions prevailed in this more sheltered place. Withdrawing through the labyrinth of gloomy passages and rooms, on regaining the stairs I was smiled at, mildly frowned upon, and scrutinized once again, by the lamas lolling at the entrance, who however might have been his bodyguard. Aziza was disappointed, and he considered the furniture and trappings in the palace tawdry to what might have been expected in a king's palace, and admittedly, the King's modest attire was not impressive in its sombreness ; but Aziza, prone to criticize men, customs, and country, invariably extolled the amenities of his native land, even though no disparagement was intended.

To counteract an anticipated weakness of construction in the foundation, the outer walls of these, large lamaseries are built at a reclining angle. The roof is not without outside embellishment in allegorical tokens, and, often, as at Kulu, ornamented with gold-leaf, if not solid gold ; decorated lavishly in the interior with frescoes, representations, in the most gruesome of malicious aspect, either jet-black or fair, of demons, interspersed with deities of an inane, if placid countenance. Several on exhibition immortalized by artist and sculptor, no doubt, were formerly an innovation from more southern climes. While many a shrine must have harboured the ashes of saint, or sinner. But the gods of Lamaism must be legion, and moreover may never suffice for each and every minor distraction in a world of sorrow !

Composed of skulls and bones, human and yak, in Tibetan characters of huge dimensions, was the " Om mani padmi hum " or " Hail to the Jewel in the Lotus ! " A landmark on the face of the hill which confronted the King's window, a pleasing or unpleasant prospect, according to taste. Numbers

of human skulls, the residue from many cremations, littered the swampy ground beyond, where the Solitary Snipe¹ rose on whirring wings; and on the slopes above odd pairs of Snow Pheasant,² driven down by inclement weather, to be inferred by their courtship actions, and the only one specimen obtained (April 20) that contained an egg in the oviduct, were preparing for another year's brood. The snow continuing to fall steadily, no further time was to be lost, and I made every effort to supplement my collection of birds with additional specimens, when the precinct of the lamasery and adjacent ground was crowded with Rosefinches,³ Accentors,⁴ Redstarts,⁵ Larks⁶ and Pipits⁷, of several species, and in numbers. My former guide was not averse to show his prowess with a small-bore gun once again for a brief interval before an audience of his supporters. Crows were outnumbered by Red-billed Choughs,⁸ whereon the gables of the lamasery sat fully-fledged progeny, awaiting the return of pater- and mater-familias with the eagerly expected morsel, when a soft *k'chufe* would soon be displaced by a querulous *tchare*, as a sweep of wings carried them away once more to forage for insatiable appetites. Blackbirds,⁹ white-collared males and dingy-collared females, were grouped on the bare ground where Mountain-finches,¹⁰ drab in colour, but pleasing in pattern, clustered to the extent of many a score, when, if using but a .410 collecting gun, by shooting to 'comb' the ground, a sufficient number were obtained with a single dust-shot cartridge, which saved further expenditure of time and powder on this numerous species. In the pine forests a thrilling sight was a party of fifty, saffron-yellow and greenish-black Grosbeaks¹¹ moving

¹ *Capella solitaria* (Hodgs.). ² *Tetraophasis szechenyi* Madaraz.

³ *Erythrina rubicilloides rubicilloides* Przew. *Erythrina thura feminina* (Rippon). *Erythrina pulcherrima argyrophrys* (Berlioz).

⁴ *Prunella fulvescens khamensis* Sushkin. New to Szechwan. *Prunella strophiatea multistriata* (David). *Prunella immaculata* (Hodgs.). Only found in the forest. *Prunella rubeculoides fusca* Mayr.

⁵ *Phenicurus schisticeps* (Gray). *Phenicurus ochrurus rufiventris* (Vieill.). Seen in pairs, sparingly, in low scrub, but it was seldom driven closer in.

⁶ *Alauda arvensis weigoldi* Hart. On ground beyond.

⁷ *Anthus roseatus* Hodgs. In damp localities.

⁸ *Pyrrhocorax pyrrhocorax himalayensis* (Gould).

⁹ *Turdus kessleri* (Przew.).

¹⁰ *Lencosticte nemoricola nemoricola* (Hodgs.).

¹¹ *Perissospiza icteroides affinis* Blyth.

Lanius sphenocercus giganteus Przew. An adult male to a pair of this Shrike was obtained on April 15. New to Szechwan. Distribution according to Hartert: Kansu, on the upper Yellow River, Koko Nor.

amid the foliage of the lofty trees, with plaintive call-notes ; where the Three-toed Woodpecker ¹ was also sparingly distributed. Owing to the height of the trees, the woodpeckers shot twice failed to drop, when we had to fell the trees, and one was lost within the débris when the crash came after hours of labour with a *kukri* or Nepali knife, and an inadequate axe that only allowed of a few blows before the head parted from the handle. A pair of Woodcock, ² seen in a forest glade thickly carpeted with dead leaves, could only have shortly arrived at their intended breeding-haunt ; I was not to meet with this delectable denizen of shady retreats after this occasion, so unexpectedly, so far north. A Lämmergeyer, ³ the monarch of the air, would intermittingly frequent the hill-slopes, clumsily beating for Picas. ⁴ Numbers of these, fluffy, little rodents could, with quick vision, be detected at the entrance of a burrow on ground, covered with scrub-growth, whence they had emerged for warmth and food. An unusual and high-pitched bleating call excited my curiosity, but movement only allowed me to obtain a glimpse of a Serow ⁵ or Goat Antelope, so pestered was I by the attention of a pair of rasping-voiced Laughing-thrushes, ⁶ when crawling on my hands and knees to fathom the secret surrounding this trait of courtship. A hare was once disturbed, but this timid creature was never numerous anywhere, yet widely distributed. Commodious pitfall traps, for deer, bears, wolves, or other large mammals, which would be so unfortunate to venture thereon, were frequently recognized in the remote depth of the forest where one had cautiously to move. Large salamanders, harmless but repulsive, wriggled beneath the stones in the bed of the streams where frogs lurked at the edges : all to find a place in my spirit or formaline tins, which frequently required to be soldered before departure, as the veteran, screw-topped, copper collecting-tank loaned to me by Kermit Roosevelt was already full, and my empty kerosene-tins had to be requisitioned as a substitute.

Wherever they hailed from, it was a motley gang that assembled at evenings for some semblance of drill without

¹ *Picooides tridactylus funebris* Verr.

² *Scolopax rusticola rusticola* L.

³ *Gypaëtus barbatus grandis* Storr.

⁴ *Ochotona thibetana zappeyi* Thomas.

⁵ *Capricornis sumatrænsis milne-edwardsi* David.

⁶ *Garrulax maxima maxima* (Verr.).

arms ; though, despite their sanguinary appearance, no disparaging remarks, at least audible, reached my ears on coming in contact with them on my out-goings or in-comings ; it was a mystery whence they came ! Each day opened to the weird yet singularly appropriate sound of trumpet, cymbal, conch, and drum. Occasionally a weighty load would be brought down to be washed at the stream ; which, without a too close inspection, was obviously lode gold in its resemblance to clinker. Before sunset, anxious lamas busied awhile to attend service, with shuffling feet, in conformity with the tenor of a bygone past. The mournful prayer, in endless repetition, of some unfortunate mortal above me, racked my nerves, helpless to remedy his infirmity.

Sporadic thunderstorms, almost daily, would appear suddenly after noon when clouds, inky black, burst and chilled the air—unsettled conditions portending the advent of summer.

My window had always been the rendezvous of all and sundry as soon as I returned until I retired ; and urchins had unceasingly brought toads, frogs, and miscellaneous finds. No case of petty larceny had occurred, having been often warned by the Muli Lama, merely as a precautionary measure, seldom was any article within easy reach. Preparing to depart, our activities were soon noised abroad, when my room would be visited by lamas and probationers of all ages, to see what could be obtained in the way of discarded oddments. Numbers could never have seen the trivial box of matches. A steady file promptly appeared with petty articles to dispose of, but when it came to commodities of food : the sight of a lama, all smiles, casually rolling a dark, obscure object in his grimy hands—a ball of curdled milk—was repellent to my stomach, and, if not too eagerly accepted, it was never refused for reasons of propriety. No questions were asked as to their ultimate fate, though probably relished by others.

The Tibetan Apso, few in number, occasionally came out-of-door, but never ventured beyond, and they were apparently well treated, but not pampered.

The ponies belonging to the King were daily occupied in transporting fuel, of which commodity the lamas were already well supplied, sufficient to last a siege of indefinite duration, as stacks were in evidence alongside every house ; so that the ponies which arrived on the morning of April 23, appro-

priately St George's Day, belonged to villagers who must have come some considerable distance to fulfil their pledge.

My presence, of no vital account, now that everything was in readiness overnight that could be closed down, I strolled out of the yard, blocked with ponies, drivers, lamas, and my servants, engaged in sorting out the loads, to take a last look round the *gomba*. Black bear, with other skins and skulls of carnivora, in prominent positions, no longer presentable with the ravages from exposure, overlooked the quadrangle, where two lamas were engaged marking out the ground in symmetrical figures, preparatory to ceremonies. On my return some advance had been made to reach order out of confusion, though one demurrer was now wrangling over his load; and, Ming-sän, tying on an additional, light article to what was already in his charge, a 'rumpus' started, ending by the pony-driver's rudely casting it aside. Ming-sän, energetic and impetuous, was by this act thoroughly aroused, when I feared the consequence, as a move had been evident to draw knives. However the quarrel subsided before serious trouble developed; I was ready to intervene, without loss of dignity, should it be demanded, when surrounded by a section of the lamas who seemed to welcome this display of anger, which attitude boded no gravity, when sullenness signifies danger.

Intimation must have been sent beforehand by special messenger, notifying the villagers of my expected arrival, as from now on I should be dependent on the *ula* or corvée system in force in the King's dominion, recognized willingly or reluctantly as a tribute of service to the Power in the Land.

There is an absorbing fascination about 'the open road', and the desire to push on requires an effort of will to counteract when work has to be done, which cannot be hurried; and, more so, when traversing a country about which information is scanty, negligible or completely negative, as many a chance is apt to be missed, particularly when it is quite out of the question to deviate where no trail exists.

I wonder how many, sequestered hollows were passed this morning, untrodden by the foot of man! Rolling downs as far as vision permitted; compact bits of tall-conifer forest, stopping short at the endless waste of grassland around. In one, expansive valley, watered by a clear-flowing stream, herds

of yak were leisurely grazing, aimlessly, under the supervision of nomad Tibetans, who presented the first indication of the wild region now to be encountered.

The site of a recent marquee, with the ground laid out with strict regard to direction in its approaches, lined with branches of spruce or juniper, pressed upright into the ground, had served its purpose ; when, doubtless, no more fitting spot could have been chosen for the King's subjects to show obeisance, in contemplation of the pervading solitude. My attention was directed to a massive range of snow-clad mountains, west-north-west, somewhat obscured by clouds, yet majestic in isolation, which the Lama, my latest guardian, called the Shola Gonka. I would gladly have tarried, but I had to wrench myself away from a sight so absorbing in its entrancement.

We rested at midday, overlooking a long, deep valley, trending north and south, with the river flowing to the south-east. With the exception of a few Redstarts¹ and Wagtails,² birds had not been obtrusive, so that a solitary Kestrel³ attracted my notice, perched on the topmost branch of a pine ; seemingly, a pale coloured example from observation, I presumed it was a late migrant. Innumerable Swifts, or possibly Crag Martins,⁴ enlivened the air with momentary gyrations, instantaneously to change position with the dispersal of unseen midges. All hands were employed in searching decaying logs and the bed of upturned stones, an occupation that was regularly performed at every halt to procure beetles, one family of which, the Carabids, and ground beetles, at high altitudes are always worth attention.

After leaving a stretch of woodland on the descent, it was a short journey to our camping-site, once the rough but serviceable bridge had been left ; we were now within one of those, charming valleys where Nature has lavished all her art in subtle refinement, appealing to one's soul with its discernment of the Sublime, to which eminence Man's effort so seldom attains. Here, I was, an intruder in Nature's domain ; and, undoubtedly the first Occidental to put foot on its soil, but, at all events, an appreciative witness of its entrancing beauty. " I love not man the less, but Nature

¹ *Phœnicurus frontalis* Vig.

² *Motacilla lugubris alboides* Hodgs.

³ *Falco tinnunculus tinnunculus* L.

⁴ *Riparia rupestris* (Scop.).

more. . . . To mingle with the Universe, and feel what I can ne'er express, yet cannot all conceal."

This hamlet, Itze, was actually 500 feet lower, than Kulu at 12,100 feet, in spite of the altitudes the trail had followed, so that the drop had been considerable as well as unexpected.

By way of salutation, sticking out the tongue and placing the tip of the fingers in the ears is one method of recognition, if more exacting than a nod of the head; but I refrained from a similar performance when the occasion demanded.

Traps were duly set, and a number of Voles¹ and Wood-mice² caught; and one of the Nashis brought in a White-eared Pheasant,³ one of a few, which were frequenting a lateral ravine. Two species of Laughing-thrush,⁴ which I was to meet with frequently later, and an exquisite Rosefinch⁵ figured among other, interesting birds, obtained by myself.

A change in the wind brought rain, and without a tent erected I slept with one of the covers, dwindling in number, used for protection to the loads, over my bedding, with Aziza's umbrella at my head; to waken in the morning, and find a pool of water, which had been retained by my ground-sheet: the result of a persistent drip which had percolated instead of falling clear.

A pair of white-eared pheasants alighted below the trail when we were fully occupied, preparatory to moving. That often happens! Consisting of ponies and yaks, with the addition of villagers, both men and women, we were a scrap lot as my baggage was sorted during the discomfort of sleet; but, still with insufficient help, which necessitated Ming-sän's waiting behind, until further assistance was forthcoming.

The more or less undulating trail, running parallel to the on-flowing river, where the White-breasted Dipper⁶ skimmed its surface with arrowy flight and dived into its pools to emerge without a misplaced feather after its rambling on the pebbly bottom, traversed delightful bits of coppice and wood-

¹ *Eothenomys proditor* Hinton.

² *Apodemus speciosus orestes* Thomas.

³ *Crossoptilon crossoptilon crossoptilon* (Hodgs.).

⁴ *Garrulax ellioti ellioti* (Verr.). *Garrulax maxima maxima* (Verr.)

⁵ *Erythrura rubicilloides rubicilloides* Przew.

⁶ *Cinclus cinclus beichi* Meise.

land, sparingly occupied by birds where a Tree Creeper,¹ appeared once more, absent for a long interval after leaving the Likiang Range; and by the side of the trail a pair of rare Accentors,² and a solitary, pale Chat³ were to be seen, with Willow Warblers⁴ of two species.

I should have missed my direction and I was continuing, straight on, had not a youth herding cattle on the hillside signalled for me to follow the trail which bore up the mountain on my left. This proved an arduous ascent through heavy forest, where on the seldom travelled trail appeared a yellow ranunculus and a mauve primula, peeping through the snow. Midday found us still below the summit, but halted at an open bit of ground, deep in snowdrifts. Here a small Babbler⁵ was secured where it was haunting the shrubs in pairs, and met with for the first time. Wandering farther afield to investigate a loud bark with which I was later to become very familiar, so closely did the pheasants—for they were the cause—assimilate with the snow-covered ground, my inability to locate the place whence the sound emanated was excusable; though I might have been led to believe, but for my better judgment, at least a couple of wolves must be the culprits, and in my proximity. These pheasants were the Tibetan White-eared Pheasant,⁶ previously mentioned, and locally known as *jhagha* from this peculiar, canine-like voice.

On my return the caravan had moved off; when it was with some concern I viewed one of my specimen-boxes, to all intents and purposes abandoned. On questioning Laoyang, who had remained behind to explain matters, he reported that one of the carriers had refused to take his turn. I saw visions of an indefinite, lonely vigil until the Lama, who had also remained at Itze, could arrive to rectify this omission on the part of the villagers who, up to now, had shared in this disagreeable if not unenviable, but imperative task. However, all's well that ends well! The culprit with some diffidence eventually returned with two of the boys, who had cajoled him

¹ *Certhia familiaris khamensis* Bianchi.

² *Prunella immaculata* (Hodgs.).

³ *Saxicola torquata* > *indica* (Blyth).

⁴ *Phylloscopus proregulus forresti* Roths. *Phylloscopus reguloides claudiae* (La Touche).

⁵ *Fulvetta striaticollis* (Verr.).

⁶ *Crossoptilon crossoptilon crossoptilon* (Hodgs.).

into a renewal of responsibility. It only wanted a cheery word of encouragement to give this artless yokel a new lease of energy. Where his body reeked with vapour under a cumbersome load that was not, however, excessive in weight, my head steamed like a boiling kettle, with a sharp tang in the dry air, due to exertion necessitated by my deviations from the trail. In any case, getting upset never helps matters, and we should reach camp in all probability, some time.

Masses of grey lichen¹ hung gracefully like drooping pennons from every branch, characteristic of the pine forests in this zone of precipitation. Fungi, of a size unexpected at these, high altitudes, clung to the trunks at wide, irregular intervals, both beautiful in shape and colour. I regretted my inability to collect and preserve these curious groups of arboreal adornment, except for a utilitarian purpose, when the lichen answered for packing material. So closely interwoven and interdependent are Nature's creations, I was lost in admiration at the unsullied prospect in this fairy-like grotto—one of countless others—alas! beyond the reach of similar sympathetic admirers, less fortunate.

Nearing the summit, gnarled rhododendron of well-proportioned trees covered a shelving bank, but less advanced to maturity in bloom than many tracts, previously seen. We had descended 100 feet from summit level, 14,400 feet, when we turned off the trail to a sodden piece of ground while, though clear of brushwood, there was only sufficient dry soil on which to pitch the inner canvas of my tent. As we were about to leave next morning, the Lama and Ming-sän, bringing the residue of equipment, arrived on the scene, when all resumed the daily tramp.

A solitary pair of Choughs,² disporting about a craggy bluff, lent an additional factor to the loneliness of the prospect, and apparently there were some that shunned the sanctuary of the lamaseries, preferring a wilder retreat. The trail undulated through a forest of prickly oak, not dwarfed as in the south, but of a size more correctly designated trees. On the descent, one of the youthful pony-drivers, with a sporting

¹ *Usnea barbata* or *U. longissima*. That applies also to the Conifers at 3,000-5,500 feet in New Guinea, Lat. 7° Long. 146°. S. of the Equator.

² *Pyrrhocorax pyrrhocorax himalayanus* (Gould).

bent, detected a Mouse Hare¹ enter its burrow. It was the work of many minutes to open out the tunnelled ground when, on gaining the end, an equally active pair of hands prevented its elusive escape. A few Grosbeaks² were obtained on the forested slopes. After crossing a stream, running west and east, which bisected the trail, a short, stiff ascent over slippery rocks, where sulphur springs spurted from the crevices, was succeeded by an ill-defined trail when, after 1,000 feet of a rise, we had reached the summit of the Kon La at 14,600 feet.

The villagers, carrying equipment, proffered the information that in the winter the blizzards take their toll in human and animal life of those unfortunately compelled to contest its terrors. On this day of sunshine, a moment's reflection would enable such a tragedy to be visualized, where the open wide valley continued without the remotest trace of mankind, and through its spaciousness wended a sluggish stream, northwards; when, honking on the wing at our intrusion, a solitary pair of Brahminy Duck³ proclaimed its sanctity within the realm of Nature's solitude. Little else in bird-life was there except a lone Wagtail⁴ with rich yellow head, and an odd Green Sandpiper.⁵

My pony daily enjoying the benefit of an empty saddle, whenever I did elect to mount on nearing camp, it was invariably the sign for his taking the bit between his teeth. On this occasion, having a level stretch of ground in front of him to our midday halt, where every other pony had been already relieved of its load, obvious to him, he started off on his mad career, neighing and snorting with a lung-power to be envied, heedless of any and every obstruction underfoot. The only remedy to hand was to forcibly turn him into 'the rough', with the possibility of a bad fall, should he cross his legs. It was none of his concern, should my aneroid be lost or a scattering abroad take place of the numerous valuables, bulging my pockets.

A systematic search for beetles, which demanded the dislodging and some weight lifting of the embedded stones,

¹ *Ochotona thibetana zappeyi* Thomas.

² *Perissospiza icteroides affinis* (Blyth).

³ *Casarca ferruginea* (Pall.).

⁴ *Budytes citreola calcarata* (Hodgs.).

⁵ *Tringa ochropus* L.

produced the ordinary quota of my desiderata. Abrupt, sterile mountains reared their rugged, rock-distorted summits, defying further near approach, and the trail, as if in condescension, sharply turned, winding round a mound on the right where, after reaching higher ground, a pair of Crested Hawk Eagles¹ came into view, bold in the attack of some feathered or furred quarry in the scanty shrubs: a virtual terror to defenceless, weaker creatures, nevertheless a glimpse *feræ naturæ* in combined action with a set purpose! It commenced to drizzle. The endless variety of the scenery was enhanced by a sheer wall of rock, some hundreds of feet in height, overlooking the unseen depth of a defile ahead; a stunted, purple iris—the forerunner of many more—was alone in its lustre, recalling to mind the immortal lines, yet by some strange fate not born to blush unseen. Thickets of hill bamboo (*Arundinaria*) usurped the steep declivities of the forested slopes, disappointing in the apparent absence of birds I had otherwise expected.

The ponies had shown restiveness at their recognition of a small clearance, and it seemed opportune to express my intention, desirous of camping on a limited flat in this wooded defile, which we had reached by the frail but fitting bridge. But the muleteers were forging ahead, and I proceeded with reluctance, on the understanding that the hamlet, Saghi, was near at hand, though this statement was liable to elasticity when it became a question of mileage, or rather, local *li*. The first house since leaving Itze was reached, and I was consoled in my later choice of this, lateral defile—a complete contrast in its silvan beauty to the treeless strath with its own characteristic wildness, earlier traversed.

My tent was pitched, and packages were expeditiously sorted of those that could best be spared and of least value, as, owing to a scarcity of villagers, a number of loads had to be sent on ahead during the night. One poor creature, distressed to the extent that she had brought her peace-offering of meal, implored the Lama to exonerate her from service when prostrated in her anguish. To these appeals the kindly lama could not acquiesce, though he must have made every allowance, as she was met hurrying homeward long before I reached our midday halt next morning.

¹ *Spizaetus nipalensis nipalensis* (Hodgs.).

Ineffaceably fixed in my memory is this delightfully situated, secluded hamlet of Saghi at an altitude of 12,500 feet, yet within a deep defile, so prolific was it of birds, and presumably small mammals. With the beginning of another day, Blood-pheasants¹ were calling on the hill-sides. Seated at my breakfast, a flock of Snow Pigeon,² between twenty-five and thirty in number, hustled over the bare, cultivated ground beyond the stream like the flow and ebb of a frothy sea lapping the open beach. All my equipment had been dispatched when I decided to work my way along the bed of the stream. A startled Hare³ sprang up at my feet; a Blood-pheasant made off unobtrusively for a denser retreat; a party of noisy Laughing-thrushes⁴ hopped with vigorous jumps, and skimmed the ground, strewn with auburn-tinted leaves; while overhead sat Rosefinches,⁵ anticipating the first gleam and warmth from the oncoming, direct rays. Leaving the bed of the stream for the trail, a Hoopoe,⁶ unmolested, was so confiding as to take but scant notice of us within a few arm-lengths; the pair, last seen, had been at 14,300 feet, and, in a wilder retreat, much less familiar in consequence.

By midday the rise had been gradual, and we were still within the same defile. On resuming, a sharp rise through the forest brought us out on the open expanse again, when we entered a shallow valley, surrounded with low hills in endless repetition, which seemed as if I had gained the eaves of the world⁷ at last, so easily accessible did their bare, rounded summits appeal to my imagination.

Breaking away from the trail, we crossed a stream lined with aquatic shrubs, and pitched camp alongside a Tibetan encampment of yak herdsman and their families; where, after feeding the couple of ferocious dogs with the residue of my dinner, now more amenable to a near approach, a small quantity of fresh milk came as a luxury after being so long without.

¹ *Ithaginis cruentus geoffroyi* Verr.

² *Columba leuconota gradaria* Hart.

³ *Lepus comus* G. M. Allen.

⁴ *Garrulax maxima maxima* (Verr.).

⁵ *Erythrina rubicilloides rubicilloides* Przew.

⁶ *Upupa epops saturata* Lönn.

⁷ *On the Eaves of the World.* Reginald Farrer. (Arnold 1926, New Impression).

The Laughing-thrush¹ met with in parties lower down during the morning was represented by a single pair, and these would, probably, be early breeding birds. Though this camp, Zumpa, was 14,000 feet, the ubiquitous Magpie² was in evidence, but only three in number. The Lama chose to try his hand with his matchlock, and he brought in a hare,³ which he had had the good sense or the luck, not to blow to pieces at the short range he had aimed.

Next morning the threatening sky brought snow, and we made every effort to get under way as soon as possible. We had not proceeded far, when a small party of four to five Eared-pheasants attracted our notice by that persistent, loud, barking call, and it was possible to discern them as they slowly moved over the sides of a lateral gully, and they had every appearance of descending lower, with the increasing snowfall. Despite the muleteers having done sufficient shouting to arouse the birds' suspicion, in an endeavour to attract the attention of my sluggish retinue, already lagging behind; apart from an alertness, no attempt was made to race up the hill, as they invariably do when frightened, until two of my Nashis made a feeble and misdirected advance after this, unnecessary delay. By this time I did not consider it worth while personally to take a hand beyond giving the necessary instructions how to proceed, which were needlessly disregarded and now doomed to failure. This opportunity had, however, given me the desired means of testing one collector, who had come to me at the last moment with an exaggerated or false estimation of his own capabilities, and it was not long before I regretted having been so foolish as to give him employment when he proved to have no aptitude for the work. As it turned out, his interest lay more in the questionable pleasures of Tachienlu; he was making a convenience of me to reach this goal of his desire.

The slight undulations of the trail corresponded to the direction of the flow in the streams. It was to be noticed that two watersheds were peculiar to this strath.

Our mascot having heroically struggled along the previous day with an attack of colic, caused by a surfeit of maize after

¹ *Garrulax maxima maxima* (Verr.).

² *Pica pica bottanensis* Deless.

³ *Lepus comus* G. M. Allen.

hard times, took fresh heart, and soon we were all making heavy weather through the snowdrifts.

Short of the Yonka La, 15,000 feet, I made an unobstructed inspection of the King of Muli's alluvial gold-mines in working order, where the red soil was being dug out of deep pits by women, some ten feet below the surface, later to be transferred to the washing cradle in the bed of a stream near by. Meanwhile, 'Billy,' ever at my heels, was perplexed at these deviations from a straight trail which, however, was deep in snow and completely obliterated.

I was surprised to see so many small birds at these wind-swept altitudes; inclusive of Rosefinches¹ and Redstarts,² were a few Rubythroats,³ the male only with brilliant, crimson throat; a pair of Marsh Tits,⁴ resembling a Crested Tit in life, as to deceive me as such at first, which titmouse seemed ever present with me on my travels beyond Likiang; and a warbler,⁵ a single individual, obtained for the first time at Kulu, the farthest limit south, where it was found in its winter quarters.

As a fresh relay of transport carriers was required from the villagers (wherever they would come from it was difficult to realize), a halt was called, when the Lama and others set about getting fires alight, at a disadvantage, as it never ceased to snow. But soon the Lama brought me a steaming bowl of buttered tea, brewed from rank leaves and twigs, a welcome, refreshing stew, provided no notice be taken of the rancid, oily lump, so-called butter, which constituted the main ingredient, and disregarding the addition of a hair or two, which last, if lucky, might be sometimes avoided. The parched meal, *tsamba*, required little preparation, rolled into balls by each participant.

As the next lot of villagers had not arrived there was nothing left but to stack the bulk of my equipment, and cover it with the sheets at our disposal to await their arrival, with an assurance from the Lama that nothing would be lost or stolen. We continued with a couple of yaks, struggling along the boulder-strewn trail, further impeded by heavy snow-

¹ Possibly *Erythrina thura feminina* (Rippon).

² *Phœnicurus frontalis* Vig.

³ *Calliope tschebaiewi* Przew.

⁴ *Parus palustris dejeani* Oust.

⁵ *Phylloscopus affinis* (Tick.).

drifts. I had difficulty in getting gingerly past on the narrow ledge, as these animals showed a resentment at my presence, so totally unaccustomed to anyone unlike their owners in dress and appearance, and possibly smell. It seemed as if the nose-rope would tear through the muzzle in endeavouring to break loose.

With the valley taking on a different aspect by contraction, and the mountains rising on both sides some 1,000 to 2,000 feet above in fantastic outline, with pillars of rock perched like solid chimneys, battered, inclined at all angles, the Yonka La, 15,000 feet, as seen on this day, presented a scene of awe-inspiring grandeur.

After a prolonged descent the trail sharply rose over the face of a mountain on the right, and I marvelled that any four-footed animal, apparently so unwieldy, could tackle such an execrable surface, and at so acute an angle. The deep valley on our left was obscured in cloud; while the ravages of a forest fire showed naked, gaunt pine trees looming through the mist, impressive in death. The trail now skirted the rocky mountain-side, whereon a Hazel-hen,¹ a recently described form, ran across, whose identification puzzled me, as I had not expected to meet with it so far south. After undulations and a sharp rise, we appeared to traverse the rounded summits of the mountain, partially obscured by mist and intermittent sleet, when, at one bifurcation of the trail, I had gone about 300 yards in the wrong direction, until recalled.

Grand forest was encountered on a long descent, where, at 13,500 feet, a pair of wrens 'chitted' in an open part of the forest, on and over several, prostrate tree-trunks. Odd rhododendron trees, with bunched flowers of the most exquisite and palest of pink, bordering the trail, which now rose once more, and unexpectedly we had arrived at the small lamasery of Tiyu, 12,950 feet.

Here I found excellent quarters after the trying conditions during this march, and, immediately, one of the lamas brought in the brasier of glowing charcoal, when every fire was needed to dry wet clothes, and sodden boots found a convenient and safe place beneath. Little further could be done that evening

¹ *Tetrastes sewerzowi secunda* Riley 1925.

in setting traps owing to the necessaries not arriving ; and it was not until the following evening when two of the boys, who had gone back to investigate the cause of the delay, arrived with everything intact.

In the interval the woods and bare ground had been productive of many, interesting animals. A pair or two of the sombre coloured Long-snouted Squirrel,¹ widely distributed at high altitudes, ran in and out of the loosely constructed walls that enclosed the bit of cultivated ground, or comprised the bounds of cattle-pens. Small groups of an uncommon Rosefinch² were outnumbered by Mountain-finches,³ one flock of which must have comprised one hundred birds. Neither were the Kite⁴ and the usual pair of Hoopoes⁵ absent. The Daurian Redstart⁶ (seen during the winter in the compounds at Tengyueh) was represented by an odd pair on its breeding-grounds. Various Blackbirds⁷ and Laughing-thrushes,⁸ besides Accentors,⁹ made up a concourse of visitors to the cobbled enclosure of the few houses, as snow and sleet steadily fell in a repetition of yesterday.

The Lama acting as my guide would give me the benefit of his company when in close contact with the fire ; and, while adding a piece of charcoal with the bamboo tongs, indulged in explanatory remarks on the brilliantly coloured frescoes surrounding me, of little account to him. I was at a loss to know why Buddha, with unruffled countenance, should have one eye closed, until a miniature figure of a siren, almost hidden by the foliage, was pointed out, and the clue to his embarrassment. My clothes came in for a certain amount of finger pressure when the woven texture was under examination. He informed me that the people were known as Ba Meutze (Miao-tzu), though generally referred to as Hsifan.

Seeing a few skins and horns hanging on the inner veranda,

¹ *Dremomys pernyi griselda* Thomas.

² *Erythrina eos* Stres. Obtained previously at Wushi and later at Lanepa and Tachienlu, sixteen specimens in all.

³ *Leucosticte nemoricola nemoricola* (Hodgs.).

⁴ *Milvus migrans lineatus* (Gray).

⁵ *Upupa epops saturata* Lönn.

⁶ *Phænicurus aureus* (Pall.).

⁷ *Turdus kessleri* (Przew.). Obtained.

⁸ *Garrulax ellioti ellioti* (Verr.). Obtained.

⁹ *Prunella rubeculoides fusca* Mayr.

I purchased a Cat-bear,¹ Hog-badger,² Weasel,³ and a pair of sámbar horns ; but, with the exception of the weasel, the remaining skins were unfortunately despoiled of skulls.

A rift in the clouds disclosed high mountains for a brief interval, due east of the lamasery, next morning, and though the immediate prospect was obscure, as the villagers filtered in, we prepared to start. We numbered not far short of fifty carriers, mainly children and women, with a couple of ponies, a donkey, and a cow. The row of prayer-wheels outside received many hand-turns, as each one advanced to spend a few hurried moments in this more or less essential ritual. Before attempting the 1,400 foot-rise, on the descent I collected three Snow-pigeons⁴ out of a large flock below the lamasery. On reaching the summit at 14,300 feet, an unsuccessful shot at a forlorn Jungle Crow,⁵ ever on the alert at the halt of a caravan, with my .22 rifle, however near, missed its mark, and by noon we had dropped to 12,850 feet. With the exception of a hare, seen in the snow at 14,000 feet, little else had been noteworthy. It was apparent from the endless rises and descents when tackling the deep rifts of the mountains, and a parallel chain of snow-capped peaks in the prospect, that we were traversing one of the most rugged tracts of country yet encountered, however, liberally covered with forest.

Responding to request, my binocular was handed round when halted, to satisfy an eager desire of all who wished to scan distant objects, when a child-like surprise resulted from its high-power magnification ; fewer articles of mine gave more pleasure when this request was seldom refused. The sun had shone throughout the afternoon, and it was with a sense of relief my tent was pitched alongside the hamlet of Yatsu at 11,200 feet. I had always allowed my servants and preparators to utilize the outer canvas of my tent, where they piled the boxes and packages around the sides for protection from the wind, in like manner to Tibetans, which, nevertheless, more than once meant much inconvenience to myself, as the inner fly, singly, was not sufficiently rain-proof ; while

¹ *Ailurus fulgens styani* Thomas.

² *Arctonyx collaris* F. Cuvier.

³ *Mustela sibirica moupinensis* M.-Edw.

⁴ *Columba lenconota gradaria* Hart.

⁵ *Corvus levaillanti mengtszensis* La Touche.

Aziza occupied a smaller pall-tent. The limitation of camping outfit was known to all my retinue before ever we took the trail, but lightly regarded, though fully cognizant myself that it would mean my having to forego the better half of my nomadic domicile in the end, and that I was pleased to do under favourable conditions.

The Large Pied-woodpecker¹ appeared at this locality, with the Paroquet,² the Sunbird,³ a small Lark,⁴ the Yellow-headed Wagtail,⁵ the Long-tailed Rosefinch,⁶ obtained as far south as Ngulukö in Yunnan, a large Dove,⁷ and the Elegant Pheasant,⁸ a cock of which showy pheasant was to be seen strutting over a patch of bare ground in view from the opening of my tent. On the following morning more ponies were brought into our caravan, which still included a number of women, with a few men and children. An abrupt descent brought us to a densely wooded defile, resounding with song, and astir with movement of birds. Then commenced a treacherous trail, equally abrupt, rising through forest to our midday halt at 11,200 feet, where I shot a Tree-creeper,⁹ and a few tits¹⁰ and warblers (*Phylloscopus*); but failed to bring down a pigeon, few in number, that must have been the Ashy Wood-pigeon.¹¹ The maximum altitude attained this day was 13,500 feet.

The canyon of the Yalung lay somewhere on our right, yet, so profound was its depth, the river was completely hidden from view. A sharp descent landed us into another, lateral defile, lavishly wooded, wherein a torrent caused some delay as, owing to recent rain, its foaming water was in spate. Then we began an unenviable task on a trail which followed the contour of the mountain-side, winding round crevice and corner, with overhanging rocks liable at any moment to brush a laden animal off the narrow foothold. Had I not

¹ *Dryobates major stresemanni* Rensch.

² *Psittacula derbyana* (Fraser).

³ *Aethopyga dabryi* Verr.

⁴ *Alauda arvensis weigoldi* Hart.

⁵ *Budytes citreola calcarata* (Hodgs.).

⁶ *Uragus sibiricus lepidus* David & Oust.

⁷ *Streptopelia orientalis orientalis* (Lath.).

⁸ *Phasianus colchicus elegans* Ell.

⁹ *Certhia himalayensis yunnanensis* Sharpe.

¹⁰ *Aegithaliscus bonvaloti* (Oust.). *Parus palustris dejeani* Oust.

¹¹ *Columba pulchricollis* Blyth.

drawn the attention of one of the drivers to the predicament of the ponies at the tail-end of the caravan, carelessly left to find a way themselves, and had not the loads been promptly removed, they would have stood only a remote chance of survival after the fall over the precipice. Numbers of a tree with thistle-like flowers, not seen elsewhere, occurred in another defile. On passing a landslide, a small party of the Bartailed Cuckoo Dove,¹ identified with certainty, rose into the trees.

Surmounting a rise, within a sinister depth, the turbulent river appeared in a ferment of whirlpool—a hamadryad in motion—with the village of Baurong nestling within patches of cultivation of luscious green, and the jagged, arresting prominences of the rugged mountains, behind. Having arrived at the single house, and all its byres and piggeries comprised within the same building, I decided to occupy the isolated house in which the huge prayer-wheel filled most of it, but allowing sufficient room for a stretcher and a few essentials, when stacked. We were now at an altitude of 9,000 feet, and on the boundary of the King's Dominion.

Previous to landing my equipment at the suspended cane chute, lower down the face of the mountain, at which the villagers from Yatsu had agreed to help this morning, a few birds, which included the Suthora,² first obtained south of Muli and in the Litang Valley, were collected; while a Bunting,³ with russet-coloured body and black-crested head, was to be observed. I had paid the Lama overnight all transport charges, with an extra amount for the descent, and the villagers had congregated on the left bank, in answer to the caterwauls that had been responded to in like manner. Presenting the Lama with a spare, safety-razor outfit that I was more in need of, to judge from his appearance, and in my case, touch: leave-takings terminated friendship, and I trust the villagers, who had enabled me to travel through this wild country, participated in their lawful share of the proceeds. In any event, my admiration for their loyalty to the authority of the realm duly impressed me, and it is full worthy of record.

¹ *Macropygia unchall tusalia* (Hodgs.). Not observed elsewhere.

² *Suthora styani ricketti* (Roths.).

³ *Melophus lathamii* (Gray). = (*melanicterus olim*).

These so-called cane chutes are, in reality, plaited bamboo, a much less reliable product ; they are a feature of these deep defiles where no other method is feasible to make connection from bank to bank. This arrangement necessitates two ropes that are a marvel of construction, seeing that this bamboo only grows in 12-15 feet lengths, as they have to stand the strain of the heaviest pack animal ; though it is difficult to realize that a rope under moderate tension is actually stronger than a slack rope, always provided it is devoid of faulty splicing. The wood upright supports are deeply sunk, and strengthened at the base with weighty stones, to enable the load to reach the opposite side with its own momentum, a decidedly steep declivity is essential, if the 100¹ yards distance at this ferry is to be successfully crossed.

With the arrival of the headman and other two helpers from Baurong, with the necessary thongs, it was then discovered that there was no grease to lubricate the bamboo shoe to which the load is tied. My supply of kerosene was suggested, but fortunately I was present to interpose for more than one reason. Some butter was eventually forthcoming from the other side, and the sorting out of the loads into appropriate weights proceeded, until the first consignment, by way of trial, was launched above the abyss. All went well for a time, but the rope that had been taut with the rain of recent date, as the hours advanced, now began to sag with the unusual heat. Having been well tested with heavy loads, the headman made the suggestion that we should prepare to cross. If Aziza's countenance did turn livid, as he placed his hands over and clasped the shoe, being subjected to an ordeal which required many loops and knots, he was, at all events, the first to volunteer ; and very likely there were others in the grip of an aching void, though one Nashi and Ming-sän may have previously experienced this thrill. With the final admonition to keep his head clear of the rope, otherwise an ear was liable to be lacerated, with a whizz he shot into space.

Provided one retains a fatalistic regard for a situation

¹ Amundsen gives the breadth of the river as 60 yards at low water in late December ; while Johnston, who crossed the rope, states about 70 to 80 yards. As distance over water is invariably deceptive, I have more faith in my own figures.

which cannot be evaded, when my turn came, relying on the rope for yet another load, seated upon my bedding as the cool air rushed against my face; with the initial plunge, it provided a few, soothing moments after the suspense of long waiting, and likewise an expeditious method of defeating space for a brief interval.

Trouble came with the continued stretching of the rope, as few of us had been able to gain the rocks without reversing position after a hand-over-hand, simian performance. When the turn of the ponies came, what with my pony lashing out, and the villagers engaged in fruitless attempts to reach the slide with their long, hooked poles, the immediate situation appeared none too cheerful. It was imperative that the rope should be tightened, which taking-in of the slack by infinitesimal fractions proved a long and tedious job; even then the difficulties had not been surmounted, as the second pony had to be released, somehow or other, with a foot and a half drop on to the rocks, and a bungling of this fickle situation promptly meant disaster. Suspended between the feet of one of the villagers, 'Billy' came over plaintively bleating at a further, unrehearsed insult.

Meanwhile I had been closely watching the out-going rope overhead, where another caravan was doing better than we were, judging by the terrific pace and the impact when the stony bank was reached; while the smoke from searing, caused by prolonged friction, proved that the shoe would have been the better for extra lubricant. A considerable amount of rubble and stone had to be removed, as on impact the animals had been dashed against the bank, falling in contortious attitudes, and showing every sign of the after-effects from shock. Once the thongs were secured, they were launched into space without by your leave—the whole crude business resembling a daring, circus performance.

There still remained my precious 'cargo', to which my attention was drawn, when a lull had been evident, to the quarter where the headman and Ming-sän were binding the final loads of more personal interest. The first of my specimen-boxes had been wisely further added to, with other kit, to increase its weight, yet insufficiently, as it had stuck midway. An anxious time supervened, as the man who had gone out had failed to move it, requiring a second; moreover, the

thongs since attached had broken, and evidently the villagers were not prepared for this emergency, as at this distance it meant many knotted-lengths of unserviceable thongs.

Swaying precariously with the spasmodic, jerking tugs, and, at last, landed safely, to my intense relief ; this experience saved further mishap. Ming-sän now came over, gaily assisting or impeding his momentum with some stylish and vigorous kicks ; and the villagers rose to carry what each could accomplish up the steep incline to the village of Baurong, a rise of some 500 feet to an altitude of 8,100 feet, which, with the crossing, occupied the whole morning.



(Upper) "CONSPICUOUS IN THE REAR OF A TRAIN OF PACK-ANIMALS WERE MY CLEAN-PLANED BOXES ON THE BACK OF THE CARRIERS." P. 48.

(Lower) "WE WOULD CAMP EITHER IN THE FOREST, BUT RECOGNIZED BY NAME TO THE MULETEERS." P. 48.

CHAPTER IV

INTO THE REGION OF THE PERPETUAL SNOWS

ASCENDING the notched trunk, a permanent substitute for stairs, I was shown the room that had a semblance of provision for the spiritual as well as the worldly needs of the household, which the headman desired me to accept. After removing superfluous furniture, a limited space was obtained; though the absence of light was a drawback, and the heavy layer of foul straw, and the presence of pigs and cattle below was conducive to a stench and a multitude of flies. However, it rained incessantly next day, but cleared at evening; and I was thankful for present mercies. It was satisfactory to know the villagers were amply rewarded, as they individually thanked me when paid for work, willingly accomplished. My funds were almost exhausted, so Ming-sän left with one of the villagers for Tachienlu, with instructions to return to my next intended halt, Wushi, where, from information gathered, it would very likely prove a profitable place to collect; while the best advantage could be taken of my present surroundings in the meantime.

As so often happens in a journey of this description; until accomplished, only then can definite records of previous travellers be traced and assimilated. My ultimate destination was obscure and entirely subservient to suitable country, within uncertain limits of distance and time, which resulted in deviations to the east and west of the most direct trail to Tachienlu, when later, that place seemed to be the most convenient where our party might be reunited. In consequence, I was debarred from utilizing the published results of others. In so far as snow mountains were concerned, my cognizance of the topographical features of the country, with the exception of the great divides, was extremely limited: ¹ never

¹ The only map in my possession: Yün-nan, one inch to twenty miles (Major H. R. Davies), excellent as it is, could not be expected to be of much help beyond the northern frontier.

anticipating mountains of such high altitudes to exist of which so meagre information is on record. Undoubtedly, Col. T. Roosevelt, Messrs. K. Roosevelt, C. S. Cutting, with their Chinese interpreter, Mr J. T. Young, were the first travellers to reach Tachienlu or Tatsienlu from Burma; though Mons. C. E. Bonin, a French Colonial official, travelled from Tali to Tachienlu in 1895-1896. In the reverse direction, Mr Edward Amundsen, a Norwegian missionary, left Tachienlu December 13, 1898, evidently taking the trail viâ Ulongkong (converging south of Cheto) over the highest passes by which our main party reached Tachienlu. This traveller crossed the Nak chu (Yalung) at Baurong on December 26 by a raft made of two pieces of timber, with a plank in the middle to stand on. Mention is made in his narrative¹ of thirteen passes having been crossed up to reaching Baurong. Mr R. F. Johnston, as recorded in his admirable and informative *Peking to Mandalay*, left Tachienlu on April 15, 1906, and, after leaving Cheto, some miles beyond this village, struck the highest trail, too, as he mentions reaching the summit of the Che Ri La (Pass 17,400 feet). As my route, and also viâ Cheto, lay to the north of the one over the highest passes, I must have missed this converging trail that, however, could only have diverged at a point below the Haja La in the trough where, though thought most likely to be, I hopelessly failed to note traces. If Johnston's Dza Ri Kú is the same as Zambaku, and it almost certainly is, according to its position on his map, he reached this place after crossing this portion of the country adjacent to Tachienlu, as I did beforehand. This traveller reached Baurong on April 26, 1906, and he crossed the Yalung by the rope chute ferry on the following day. So far as I am aware, no other Occidental traveller had visited Baurong in the interval, previous to my arrival on May 1, 1929, while I left after a week's residence. Although several travellers have made reference to similar rope crossings—though few have actually crossed them—there can be little doubt that twenty-three years had elapsed since Johnston made his "exit from the kingdom of Chala (tottering then and non-existent nowadays) by the undignified expedient of sliding down a rope," and my entrance.

This village has decreased in population, estimated at

¹ *Journ.* R. G. S. vol. xv, 1900, pp. 620-5.

2,000 at the time of Johnston's visit, whereas less than 100 would now be nearer the estimate of its contained and scattered inhabitants. Comprising the village were many demolished houses; and a square-shaped, two or more storied building that had the appearance of having been a barracks, overgrown outside with ivy, where a pair of Gould's Grey-headed Thrush¹ had their nest; and within, a shrub with silvery-pink flowers, which did not occur again until the Tung Gorge was traversed, a similar, deeply eroded canyon. Reminiscent of the peel-towers of Northumberland and the Lowlands in its solid structure and past history, if of unpretentious dimensions. In ruins, yet defying the ravages of time, it stood as evidence of a foray by Tibetan freebooters who had raided the village: plundering, ransacking, burning, and driving out the Chinese magistrate,² and the few troops that survived. The headman informed me these marauders might be expected again at any time, as the villagers had enjoyed a respite, which, philosophically considered, could not last indefinitely, though there could be little to pillage now, which however represented their all.

Millstones revolved, driven by a water-wheel with an upright spindle, grinding maize, and attended by children, where the torrent had been diverted into a sluice within measurable distance of the village. Hereabouts, on the dripping bank, a tall, lemon-yellow primula grew in profusion, met with nowhere else; and numbers of butterflies settled during the heat of the day on the moist ground over which the water trickled. I added several Swallow-tails,³ and a rare and handsome *Erebia*⁴ to my increasing collection.

The White-breasted Dipper⁵ frequented this torrent in

¹ *Turdus rubrocanus gouldi* (Verr.).

² At the time of Johnston's visit in charge of a tû pai hu, and one of the most important of the forty-nine sub-chiefs, paying tribute to the King of Chala.

³ *Papilio alcinous dæmonius* Alphér., with the common Oriental *Papilio polytes* L., which were diminutive specimens.

⁴ *Erebia posidonius* Leech. Other species obtained at Baurong included *Pieris canidia* Sparrm. Nine specimens, obtained later on a single occasion. *Dodona durga sinica* Mengel. *Chrysophanus li* Oberth. *Polyommatus boeticus* L. *Everes zuthus* Leech. *Achalarus (Lobocla) nepos* Oberth. A single specimen, met with nowhere else. *Achalarus germanus* Oberth. A single specimen, met with nowhere else (May 3).

⁵ *Cinclus cinclus beichi* Meise.

company with the White-capped Redstart,¹ shared also by the smaller Plumbeous Redstart,² and the Blue Whistling Thrush.³ The Kestrel,⁴ a dark breeding-race, had its aerie in a hole on the crags of a precipice. As I considered the clutch was about complete, four villagers, with their thongs and my tent-ropes, helped me to secure a lovely set of four, reddish-blotched eggs. From the behaviour of the parent birds before the male returned to the empty nest, I surmised the clutch was at least one short, and the female rose off the aerie next morning when they were allowed to stay, unmolested further. A Hobby,⁵ recognized by the black, moustachial stripe, with the cere more red than yellow, would sit on a ledge above with the same aspect for a prolonged spell, basking in the early morning sunshine; but I was unable to trace either this male or its mate, that was seen but once, to their abode. Occasionally, a Grey Harrier,⁶ as white on its underparts as an adult male, would pass over the same ground; and a pair of Black Eagles⁷ would circle round for a brief interval. A Wood-owl⁸ hooted among the venerable trees, sparse in number, surrounding a house, higher upon the mountain-side, where one was obtained. A clutch of eggs of the Jungle Crow⁹ was secured near the village; but the solitary magpie's nest already contained a single youngster—an indication, at all events, that stress of circumstances would not allow more to survive. Flycatchers¹⁰ of three or four species frequented the foliage of the few trees, aged in girth and stature, in and

¹ *Chaimarornis leucocephala* (Vig.).

² *Rhyacornis fuliginosa fuliginosa* (Vig.).

³ *Myiophoneus eugenei* Hume.

⁴ *Falco tinnunculus saturatus* Blyth.

⁵ *Falco subbuteo*. ssp. ?

⁶ Very likely the Hen Harrier, *Circus cyaneus cyaneus* (L.).

⁷ *Ictinaëtus malayensis perniger* (Hodgs.).

⁸ *Strix aluco nivicola* (Blyth).

⁹ *Corvus levaillanti mengtszensis* La Touche.

¹⁰ *Alseonax muttui* (Layard). Obtained on May 5, 1929. Little is known of the winter quarters of this flycatcher, and I was surprised to find it so far north in its breeding quarters. *Siphia parva albicilla* (Pall.). Obtained on May 2, 1929, a male. *Muscicapula hodgsonii* (Verr.). *Culicicapa ceylonensis calochrysea* (Oberh.).

around the village, where a few diminutive, greenish coloured warblers,¹ and two species of sparrow,² both widely spread but capricious in their distribution, which occurred on and about the house walls, were collected. Whiteeyes,³ insignificant in size, and inconspicuous in green and yellow plumage, flitted in a closely packed party from one retreat to another. Although encountered later in pairs within the Tung Gorge, this was an interesting example of a tropical species requited with abnormally warm conditions at these altitudes, owing to the enclosed nature of this habitat. By the river occurred an odd pair of bush-chats, pale coloured, almost as pale as the White-tailed Bush Chat,⁴ though I do not credit they were this species, too secretive to obtain; but the Dark-grey Bush Chat⁵ was more numerous, if just as retiring. During a cold snap of weather, the little White-rumped Martin⁶ hawked for winged occupants of a warmer atmosphere above the river, but never remained for any length of time on the same stretch of water. A Scimitar Babbler,⁷ correctly designated by its curved bill, had young that had left the nest, with a bill not yet, however, fully developed, and they might have been easily mistaken for something in ornithological circles, undescribed. Towards dusk on one occasion a small rail unobtrusively descended from its roost in some shrubs, abutting on the wall, alongside a rivulet diverted through cultivation, and only then it was realized what had been missed when

¹ *Phylloscopus proregulus forresti* Roths. *Phylloscopus armandii armandii* (M.-Edw.). Not recorded previously so far south, and met with at this locality for the first occasion. *Phylloscopus reguloides claudia* (La Touche).

² *Passer rutilans rutilans* (Temm.). *Passer rutilans intensior* Roths. Outram Bangs in *Field Museum of Natural History-Zoology*, vol. xviii. 1932, lists the specimens collected of the Ruddy-sparrow under both names and remarks, "Therefore here would appear to be one region of intergradation between the two forms." *Passer montanus obscuratus* Jacobi. All the specimens collected of the Tree-sparrow north of Likiang are identified as this subspecies by Outram Bangs. Throughout my journey I was greatly interested in noting every place in this wild region where this sparrow had established itself, and rarely failed to collect specimens.

³ *Zosterops simplex simplex* Swinh.

⁴ *Saxicola leucura* (Blyth).

⁵ *Rhodophila ferrea haringtoni* (Hart.).

⁶ *Delichon nipalensis* Moore.

⁷ *Pomatorhinus macclellandi odicus* Bangs & Phillips.

too late. (Other rare and interesting species of birds are listed in the context.)¹

Among other small rodents,² the Red-bellied Squirrel³ cropped up here again, as it might well have been expected. A pelt of a Ferret-badger,⁴ I purchased. Whilst urchins brought in flower haunting cockchafers, and also ground centipedes, a few of the older members of the community (disciples of, perhaps, some mute Waltonian Lama) had taken to fishing, with the result that a number of specimens, not previously obtained, were a welcome addition. A shikari visited me with several skins of the Eared Pheasant; but they were carelessly prepared, slit from throat to vent, and not presentable without laborious manipulation, so they were refused. However, the Blood Pheasant⁵ and the Lady Amherst Pheasant⁶ occurred in the mountains, and a few were secured. This fact was previously noted in the latter instance, by several tail feathers, which adorned the top of the old-fashioned chest in my quarters.

The sonorous noises made by one of the boys during the hours of sleep I uncomplainingly endured till my patience was exhausted, when he retired to the back premises to give others the benefit of his saxophonic nightmares. While no

¹ *Pericrocotus brevirostris ethologus* Bangs & Phillips.

Microscelis leucocephalus leucocephalus (Gmel.). Six adults of both sexes, all are completely white-headed specimens.

Pycnonotus aurigaster xanthorrhous And. Only one specimen was collected, a female on May 6, 1929, which "is in every way similar to specimens from Yunnan with an equally dark chest band, and does not at all approach *P.a. andersoni* (Swinh.), of the lower Yangtse Valley."

Dicrurus leucophæus hopwoodi Baker. Not previously recorded for Szechwan.

Lanius tigrinus Drapiez. An adult male of the Thick-billed Shrike was obtained on May, 2, 1929. I am not aware of any record so far south in the summer.

Suya parvirostris La Touche. This Hill-warbler was previously obtained in the Yangtse Valley at 8,000 feet on March 15 and at Muli in April.

Anthus roseatus Hodgs. Obtained at various places from February to July.

Phænicurus auroreus (Pall.). An adult female obtained on May 6, 1929, was one of a mated pair.

Ardeola bacchus Bonap. Evidently established in this outlying district owing to irrigated patches of cultivation.

² *Rattus humiliatus celsus* Allen.

³ *Callosciurus erythræus gloveri* Thomas.

⁴ *Helictis moschata ferreo-grisea* Hilzh.

⁵ *Ithaginis cruentus geoffroyi* Verr. ⁶ *Chrysolophus amherstiae* (Leadb.).

Fringilla montifringilla L. A female of the Brambling was obtained on May 6. Previously collected at Ngulukô in Yunnan.

further caravan passed through the village during my stay, those responsible were not neglectful of the ropes that represented a source of slight income, and one of them was occasionally at work, tying bands around the weak spots where signs of fraying were apparent; others were busily employed in splicing a new rope. The village blacksmiths were daily forging implements of cultivation, akin to a hoe; but the children had their allotted task and no time, or even were they so inclined, to "look in at the open door . . . and catch the burning sparks that fly". This neglected resort would always attract my attention, as I passed down the narrow way, impeded by the pigs.

A rumour was current—the wish being father to the thought—on the part of Aziza, who was naturally pining for his relations, and eager for interchange of conversation, that the rest of the party were at a place named Chuilung, some four days' journey distant; I hastened to move in case there was some truth in the statement. On the evening of the seventh day of my sojourn, everything that could be packed in readiness for the morrow was completed; but children continued to appear with various, small amphibians after tins had been sealed, and it was impossible to refuse. While the angler, who had brought a few, selected specimens previously, redoubled his efforts with a belated enthusiasm; too precious to eat, notwithstanding the fowl and egg had been scarce; but all of us were living in expectation of better fare at our next halt, however never to materialize, as it turned out. Fortunately, little satisfies me, and when food is difficult to procure, less; while it is surprising to what extent the minimum ration can be reduced when compelled by imperative need. It is said of one traveller when asked how he lived: "Wherever there are people they exist somehow, and you can likewise exist." There is also always the consolation that more die from over eating than under eating.

I was wholly dependent on the headman to assist me with transport facilities that would have to be performed by the villagers under no sense of compulsion. I had confidence in him; very pleasant recollections remain of this estimable character, who up to the last acted towards me to the best of his ability, when he must have had many difficulties to contend with. He trusted me without demur when promised

payment on the return of Ming-sän. The only two Chinamen¹ were desirous of going farther afield, and they requested permission to accompany us for protection, which was readily granted. We were delayed at the start by 'a recalcitrant' who demurred at his load, when finally the headman appealed to me, but some time elapsed before this perverse and stubborn chap could be prevailed upon to carry his proportionate share. (At such a time the adage in respect to doing a job one's self flashes through the mind, intensifying the situation.) Patience was needed, while the rain increased to make the deadlock the more unpleasant.

There was little evidence of a trail except a wall here and there with an intervening hedge to denote our outlet. After leaving the last house on the ascent we dropped sharply into a gully, when an almost perpendicular ascent over several screes intervened. Edging sharp, awkward bends, which the ponies had a ticklish task to circumvent, brought us out on the top of the trail, when on the next descent magnificent views were disclosed of razor-back ridges in this mountainous region, converging at all angles into the profundity of the Yalung, some two thousand feet below. In the distance beyond, at a considerably higher altitude than where we stood, a house or two could be seen with its requisite patch of cultivation within a hollow, of such insignificance, in no way to detract from, but contrarily accentuated, the savage grandeur of the prospect that was the most impressive view of this type of scenery I had, as yet, witnessed.

The rain increasingly descended as the loads were untied, when we all took shelter in the single house comprising the hamlet of Lanepa, situated in a well-watered ravine, with extraordinarily profuse and diversified belts of forest. Patches of which in their fresh foliage of pinkish-golden tints coalesced, yet were sharply defined from the variegated hues of green, and presented an entrancing scene of extremes in coloration of arboreal foliage. This locality warranted a sojourn, which would have amply repaid. Disclosed only now, I turned my back on its charms with regret, disappointed yet unavoidable—its treasures unrevealed.

¹ Neither Bonin nor Johnston met any Chinese inhabitants on their journeys through the Kingdom of Muli; and I met no other Chinese residents apart from this occasion in this same stretch of country, south of Tachienlu.

After crossing the lateral torrent, the trail skirted a treacherous landslide of recent date; and we traversed lavishly wooded mountain-slopes, with rhododendrons in profusion, where I collected a purple (*Cypripedium*) orchid, grouped on the ground, that was seen for the first and last time. A small lamasery, pinnaced with gilded minarets, with its adjoining, wooden dwellings, appeared on our right, without a vestige or sign of human occupants, to all intents and purposes abandoned, as in the case of one or two, single, stone houses, recently passed. These buildings had more appearance of the ravages of pestilence than the work of marauders, as they stood intact; but just as hard was it to realize that disease could accomplish this result where the purity of Nature reigned supreme, was not one familiar with the total absence of the rudimentary essentials in sanitation, considerably worse in the towns and cities, to constitute an appalling menace to the lives of its citizens. Regarded as the inevitable, otherwise an enlightened public opinion would have long since made amends; yet, from the contrary aspect, the diseases engendered by this apathy provide a check to increase in the population of China's teeming millions.

The canyon of the Yalung had been instantly lost in the maze of an irregular assemblage of distorted ground when it had been seen for the last time; and, though the distance covered had not been excessive, we were all glad when the last rise brought us to the hamlet of Pathay,¹ where accommodation was found on the upper floor of a commodious house, much of a curiosity to the goodman and his family. My aneroid now registered 11,750 feet. Supplied with a liberal amount of charcoal, always welcome, despite the fumes, and more space than usual, it left me free to attend and supervise the repacking of the loads that had been recently divided, to an extent necessary to enable the villagers to perform their task. I was pleased to purchase two or three skins of hares, recently killed, as the skulls had not been removed. 'Billy' took upon himself to climb the awkward stairs and wander about the room until tethered in the stalls. Wrangling over the loads next morning delayed an early start, but the extra time allowed an inspection of

¹ The village of Pei T'ai, according to Johnston, where this traveller stayed the night.

the few buildings, and a survey of the surrounding country, in so far as mist and cloud would allow.

Leaving the hospitable abode of our host, we continued on the ascent, reaching the summit level at 15,300 feet, when, after crossing several landslides, we pitched camp beyond a stream in a delightful conifer forest, with the ground deep in a blanket of snow. The canopy of foliage, which was already adorned with this chaste decoration, was to receive a further coat, as snow steadily fell throughout the night, and it had not ceased when we resumed on the gently undulating trail, impeded in movement; shortly afterwards, crossing another stream, descending from the right. At this point a steady ascent began over the flanks of the mountains, to the east of an open valley; the windings of a stream were visible in a diverted course through a deep, wooded defile, running west, where it was lost to view, presumably, to join eventually the sinister waters of the Yalung.

A flock of forty to fifty Snow-pigeons¹ were hurriedly picking up what seeds could be obtained on spongy ground where the snow had melted. Deep snowdrifts, of a depth sufficient to bury man and beast, were now encountered. With the trail completely obliterated, and the muleteers in doubt concerning the direction, one of them went on in advance when the caravan had been brought to a halt. This state of affairs persisted; as the sun burst through the scudding clouds in all its brilliance, the dazzling glare became a severe infliction to the sight of both ourselves and the blinking animals.

It was to be noticed that the muleteers rubbed a handful of snow at intervals on the forehead, the wooden or bamboo-peak, bare or fringed with yak hair, of the headgear having been adjusted to shade the eyes. I was more fortunate than Aziza with his turban, and the rest of my retinue were at a worse disadvantage in this respect; while Aziza was better prepared because he had taken the precaution to have handy his tinted spectacles. Prone to wander when unmuzzled, one pony must have unnecessarily suffered, restrained in neck and shoulder movement by the deliberately applied tautness of the reins, and a trail of blood was in evidence from a torn

¹ *Columba leuconota gradaria* Hart.

tongue or mouth ; but to my protest the driver paid no heed.

Plodding steadily on and reaching fifteen thousand feet, a treacherous zig-zag ended in a gradual descent where we partook of food on the trail, facing a mountain-side strewn with burnt pine trees, which, at the distance seen, appeared like charred match-sticks. With the exception of a vole, enticed from its burrow by the sunshine, nothing further called for comment, unless it was the Grosbeaks¹ at 13,700 feet, and Rosefinches² at much lower altitudes ; until, on reaching a gully, when at 13,000 feet, a wren graced its rock-lined bed, and interposed with its blithe and pleasing outburst to break the pervading solitude.

Continuing on the descent, the warmth increased ; crossing the bridge that spanned the foaming torrent in the bottom of a luxuriantly wooded valley, it was a short distance to the hamlet of Wushi (Oushih). Aziza reported the house, recommended by the villagers, to be in a dirty state, and out of the question my accepting ; when I selected the single, square room that represented the isolated abode for the *bric-à-brac* of the tenets of Lamaism, unoccupied, and evidently rarely used for worship. It could never have seen a brush for years ; but once this essential operation had been performed I considered myself extremely fortunate in having a place where I looked forward to accomplish some useful and intense work, unhampered by a too-intimate curiosity ; where my miscellaneous kit when opened out did not require to be repeatedly put under lock and key, and it could attract little attention.

Preliminary ventures in setting traps around the houses had to be done surreptitiously to avoid loss by inquisitive eyes and acquisitive hands ; but, so far, due to consistent precautions, I had little to complain about stolen traps. Handicapped by snow-blindness that, as a sequel of recent events, proved to be a severe attack, the porch partook of a hospital-ward ; but only rest could work a cure, and the two patients themselves had excluded all painful light by a muffled head. As they lay like inanimate beings and refused food, I trusted there would be no further casualties. Apart from bloodshot eyes, the rest of us suffered no further inconvenience.

¹ *Perissospiza carnipes carnipes* (Hodgs.).

² *Erythrura thura feminina* (Rippon).

Another situation, however, had to be faced, as apparently the villagers were in similar straits to ourselves in food. Perhaps I could relieve anxiety in two directions, and, while Chuilung might or might not prove to hold supplies, I should, at least, receive information, either positive or negative, whether my companions were or were not in the vicinity. Identifiable as my servants, with my card, the two who could best be spared left on this visit to the Chinese magistrate, but not without demur, though where I could get food for them anywhere else was beyond me. To within recent date my retinue had relatively fared better in bulk than myself, and, on occasions, when a pair of cranes or a number of marmots had to be prepared, their capability for disposing of such food was inordinate. Apart from my purchases at the lamaseries, of which they received the benefit, monthly pay had been increased and equalized on the way, additionally to the extra monthly allowance of road or food money that apparently did not suffice to maintain a standard of living to which they were unaccustomed in their native village. With Aziza, provident, and better prepared for emergencies, he had taken the precaution to lay in a more or less sufficient stock of his mainstay, rice ; but money was of no value now where the villagers eked out an existence on a diet of boiled nettles and other wild products. The bleating of a solitary sheep, imprisoned within an upper room in the village, held out a promise of mutton chops, of fleeting merit as the owner was unwilling to sell ; and, after all, had we not a goat ? Aziza did make the suggestion, but—perish the thought ! ‘ Billy ’ was, at last, nibbling away at the newly appearing grass to his heart’s content. Never had I seen, beyond the attentive and assiduous search over vermin-frequented clothes, any further attempt made at expediting the discomfiture of lice, with the assistance of the sun ; but one poor wretch, whether as a result of food shortage or a predilection for a ‘ luxury ’, persisted in transferring his captures to his mouth.

Temporary relief came with the return of a laden pony, and my boys, which the magistrate had been so considerate to send, with a message that what meal had been sent constituted the commodity on which he had to depend, but no information of the main party who had evidently gone through some time, previous. I settled down to work, and meanwhile

we could await the return of Ming-sän, until whose arrival moving on was out of the question. By judicious rationing of my remaining stores, I could manage for an indefinite period, and Aziza could share what he could spare. There was also a limited amount of cereals that had been utilized as bait for trapping, with the addition of some few tins of arrowroot, falsely sold to me as potato-flour, which had served its curative purpose: a more valuable expedient than for what it was originally intended, which was with the object of counteracting moisture in the preparation of skins; but a substitute of wood-ash would answer the purpose, if inadequately. (Gummed labels are liable to disappear from tins, when it is not an easy matter to decide what constitutes arsenic and flour, apart from the heavier differentiation of arsenic. Carelessness in this respect has led to disastrous consequences through cook-boys getting hold of the wrong article !)

Personally my health was sound, and food becomes a secondary consideration when inured to discomfort, sustained by the exciting pleasure in obtaining knowledge of mammal or bird, butterfly or beetle, or flower, in the endless variety of form and colour. While the enchanting beauty of my present surroundings might have been more deeply appreciated on better fare, the charm and romance remained. Delightfully wooded; surrounded by fantastic-shaped mountains; intersected by gushing streams, spanned by rustic bridges; where the narrow path and the villagers' plots of ground were enclosed by stone dykes, here and there breached with hedges of dog-rose and thorny shrubs in flower, or the humble gooseberry bush; this unsullied vale without the trace of a jarring innovation was even more exquisite in beauty than the Yorkshire Dales; but (with emphasis) without the Wensleydale cheese; yet with this drawback it was pre-eminent, and further enhanced by the friendliness of a scanty and impoverished community, sympathetically esteemed.

My quarters were decorated with the customary embellishment of brilliantly coloured Buddhas and Bodhisattvas in diverse mood and attitude, where on the altar lay the complete set of the Buddhist scriptures—how long had they so lain, unopened, only the dust could give a clue. When darkness fell and the doors were drawn, the moon would cast a

shadow through the tiny window beyond my reach, which gave me sufficient fresh air in this hallowed but eerie cell.

Outside, three bear-skulls hung, black from the smoke of muleteers' fires; in one case with traces of dun-coloured hair, of a large species, unknown to me; but more anon. A House Swallow¹ paid a fleeting visit on the morning of May 17, never to return. The Chinese Shortwing² skulked in the impenetrable thickets³ of prickly oak, and though its song was distinctly heard at daybreak, rarely were the slaty blue males seen. A Reed-warbler⁴ frequented a select patch of light growth, bisected by one of the numerous rivulets; Shrikes,⁵ Tits,⁶ a Crow-tit,⁷ a Tree-creeper,⁸ a Bullfinch,⁹ Buntings,¹⁰ Rosefinches,¹¹ of widely distributed species made up a concourse of familiar acquaintances. (Other species secured are mentioned in the context.) The Elegant Pheasant roamed the meadows, crowded with a purple iris, where numerous butterflies flitted. Several Eared-pheasants from higher ground were ignominiously hung up as scarecrows in fields under scanty cultivation, of which species I obtained specimens of both adult and chick. Thunderstorms rent the air with the lightning's vivid flash that quickly dispelled the assemblage of fleecy cloud, giving place to gleams of sunshine.

Taking advantage of a cloud-ridden sky with the sun obscured at midday, the edges of a stream, moistened by

¹ *Hirundo rustica gutturalis* Scop.

² *Hodgsonius phœnicuroides ichangensis* Baker.

³ More so than a mangrove swamp without the inconvenience of water.

⁴ *Acrocephalus concinens concinens* (Swinh.).

⁵ *Lanius tephronotus* (Vig.).

⁶ *Parus songarus weigoldicus* Kleinsch. *Parus ater æmodius* Hodgs. *Parus monticolus yunnanensis* La Touche.

⁷ *Suthora unicolor canaster* Thayer & Bangs. Only observed previously at 11,500 feet south of Yungning on March 16.

⁸ *Certhia himalayensis yunnanensis* Sharpe. Obtained on May 24.

⁹ *Pyrhula erythaca altera* Rippon. Widely but sparingly distributed.

¹⁰ *Emberiza godlewskii omissa* Roths. Obtained on May 15.

¹¹ *Erythrina eos* Stres. Obtained for the first time at Lanepa, but also met with later at Tiyu in April and Tachienlu in June. Also *Seicercus burkii valentini* Hart. Met with here for the first time. *Phylloscopus trochiloides* Sundev. Also met with for the first time. *Phylloscopus affinis* (Tick.). *Phylloscopus armandii* (M.-Edw.). *Prunella rubeculoides fusca* Mayr. *Garrulax lanceolata lancolata* (Verr.). *Dryobates hyperythrus hyperythrus* (Vigors). May 21. *Dryobates major stresemanni* Rensch. *Picoides tridactylus funebris* Verr.

Siphia parva albicilla (Pall.). *Muscicapula tricolor tricolor* (Hodgs.). *Muscicapula hodgsonii* (Verr.).

evaporation, would be frequented by clusters of butterflies¹ hustling one another to sip the cherished fluid, where I picked out many choice specimens with forceps or netted them on the ground. A Hawk-moth² with hyaline wings and yellow-banded abdomen, similarly coloured as a humble-bee, would momentarily dip into the stream, to settle motionless on the overhanging foliage where, occasionally, one might be caught undamaged with a rapid, upward sweep of the net.

Mouse-hares³ emerged unobtrusively from behind the cavities of the loosely built walls or stone dykes, but by far the best locality was an open piece of shelving ground, surrounded by shrubs, and near the forest where the outskirts held many a burrow; while in one quarter the colony had extended in number to where the ground was encumbered with fallen trees. A nice series was obtained of another new

¹ The following species were obtained in this locality and the surrounding meadows: *Aporia martineti* Oberth. Doubtfully a form of *Aporia bieli* Oust., as the latter extremely common insect, of which over two hundred and twenty-five specimens were collected, was not met with at Wushi, though both were taken later at Tachienlu and surroundings. *Aporia davidis* Oberth. More plentiful than *Aporia martineti*, of which thirty-four specimens were collected, and later at Cheto, a single, June 12. *Aporia venata* Leech. Doubtfully regarded as the spring form of *Aporia davidis*, but eight were collected at Wushi, and later at Cheto twenty were collected in June. *Metaporia goutelli* Oberth. Extremely common. More than one hundred and seventy-five collected at Wushi. *Colias fieldii chinensis* Verity. *Leucochloë daplidicæ* L. *Synchloë dubernardi* Oberth. *Anthocharis cardamines thibetana* Oberth. *Neope simulans* Leech. Ten specimens of this fine insect, which has previously been recorded from Tachienlu and to the east. Met with nowhere else. *Neope agrestis* Oberth. Over one hundred specimens were collected at Wushi and later a few at Cheto. *Ypthima beautei* Oberth. Rare. *Pyrameis cardui* L. *Vanessa urticæ chinensis* Leech. *Vanessa antiopa* L. A., single tattered specimen obtained May 25. *Polygonia c-album* L. Common. *Araschnia davidis* Pouj. Four specimens obtained May 20-25. Met with nowhere else. *Satsuma circe* Leech. Twenty-four specimens obtained and only met with on a single occasion later, between Chauloo and Tauzyeu May 30. *Chrysophanus pang* Oberth. Numerous. *Lycæna lanty* Oberth. *Lycænopsis (Cyaniris) argiolus* ssp.? *Papilio machaon sikkimensis* Moore. Common. *Papilio eurous* Leech. Rare. *Pamphila niveomaculatus* Oberth. Widely spread. *Pamphila pulchra* Leech. Obtained for the last occasion. *Pamphila micio* Oberth. *Carterocephalus (Pamphila) dulcis* Oberth. Ten males; obtained nowhere else. *Thanaos pelias* Leech. *Pyrgus (Hesperia) oberthueri* Leech. Obtained for the last occasion. *Taractrocera tilda* Evans. (MS. in press) B.M. series from Tachienlu. Collected only at Wushi, forty-four males. *Halpe baileyi* South ssp. n. One hundred and forty-five males, obtained nowhere else. *Halpe bivitta* Oberth. May 24, single male.

² *Hæmorrhagia beresowskii* Alphér. Also obtained later at Tachienlu.

³ *Ochotona cansa stevensi* ssp. nov. Osgood.

mammal in Hinton's Vole.¹ Some of the sporting element amongst the villagers had recently secured a Serow;² and when the skull and feet, which had been hung up to dry with the sinews for food, had been produced, the skin of this dark coloured sub-species was purchased. They beat the mountain-sides again with dogs when, getting on the track of a sambár, I regretted to see they had brought in the fawn, which was rightly refused, though it meant a welcome meal for them. The usual, roughly prepared pelts were offered at intervals, not amounting to much in scientific value, with the exception of the Little Panda; but I was puzzled by the thick, bristly tail³ that one of the villagers handled, similar to a brush. Doubting its identity, my Nashi boys pointed to the drawing on the wall, in substantiation that they were right.

Time rolled on in the even tenor of Peace; though I had paid scant attention to scaremongers that Ming-sän would not be seen again, I had some misgivings about him, should misfortune have happened to cause his delay. The first intimation to reach me that something unusual had happened was supplied by a batch of villagers at work in the fields, who hailed us on our return from an afternoon's collecting; but the remarks seemed just as incomprehensible to the boys as myself; when, relieved from all rumours, Ming-sän and a stout-hearted Tibetan promptly appeared with a note from Mr R. Cunningham who had been entrusted with funds on my behalf, with a methodical and thoughtful regard for my welfare by my companions, which saved me from monetary anxiety. It read: "As 800 robbers from Hsiang Cheng have crossed the Yalung and may be in the line of Ming-sän, he will go along slowly . . . as the passes were snowed up Hsüen (Ming-sän) was delayed on the road." This information was anything but cheerful, if I were not of the opinion, "Sufficient unto the day . . ." and being now in funds, little else mattered. The first thing to be done was to settle my account with the headman of Baurong, who had waited just as patiently as ourselves; with a further instalment for this delay, he departed with his more than wonted lightheartedness.

Caravans had been few in aggregate and few numerically

¹ *Eothenomys (Anthelionomys) custos hintoni* ssp. nov. Osgood.

² *Capricornis sumatrænsis milne-edwardsi* David.

³ The Goral (*Nemorhaedus g. iseus* M.-E.).

in animals, and only at rare intervals; though we had received a visit from most of them, requiring a slight detour off the accustomed trail. On May 23 a large caravan of some sixty to seventy animals passed through on the way to Yunnanfu; a smiling youth amongst the number proclaimed his pleasure at seeing us, when I recognized him as one of our former muleteers from the village of Lakashili on the Yangtse. As Ming-sän had been absent for twenty-three days, we prepared to move at the earliest opportunity, and, by arrangement with the villagers, everything was hurried forward in readiness.

It was pelting with rain when Aziza, wandering about my bed with a candle, in answer to questioning, informed me a hand-lamp was required, as the mascot, tethered alongside, had been stolen. The sound of voices, raised to attract the attention of the villagers throughout the valley, as each group of houses was situated about a half to one mile apart, in extreme on our flanks, might seem an endeavour to awaken the dead; but, without any clue forthcoming to the perpetrator of the crime, nothing further could be done that night. Yes, it was on such a night a leopard would choose to prowl round; but could it be possible that leopards, unless it was the Snow Leopard or Ounce, supreme in beauty among a rapacious group of dreaded marauders, frequented this terrain, and at this altitude of twelve thousand feet, though eminently suitable in cover and rocky ground. When this suggestion was mooted and the frayed snapped rope produced in evidence, an exhaustive search disclosed the tragedy, when the villagers brought in what remained of the fore-quarters of what was, once, 'Billy', my faithful comrade of many arduous but happy days!

There were yet another one hundred and twenty miles to be accomplished before my retinue could reach the desired haven of Tachienlu. The indispensable yak had once again been brought into our caravan, and both men and women took up their loads with cheerful and hilarious liveliness when we were again on the move. The last house was passed when few occupants could have been within doors; and, at a point where the trail diverged, the kindly villager, who partook largely in my interest, handed over my pony to the care of others, paying me a parting greeting of respect. Ming-sän pointed out the trail he had taken in the first instance

that traverses the highest passes over sixteen thousand feet, to join the one from Chuilung, which the rest of the party had used in the depth of winter (late February), when he remarked it would be almost, if not impassable now, owing to further late falls of snow, as difficulties had been encountered on his way in, so that he had returned by a less direct and unfrequented trail.

As we gradually ascended, the beauty of the head of the valley was revealed by perpendicular crag and foaming torrent, while the trail wound through open conifer forest. Embedded in the ground, an enormous boulder lay on our right, possibly brought to its permanent site by an ice-flow in the Glacial Age; but, to hazard a guess at its proportions and weight, it seemed absurdly futile. A sharp rise ensued where the open ground was thronged with crane-flies; shortly afterwards we rested, a few hundred yards below the pass, with an expansive prospect to the south.

Only a few of the ponies and none of the yaks were relieved of their loads. The expeditious method operating in the south had long since been dispensed with; the clumsier, laborious process of binding each separate load directly onto the animal had taken its place. Reaching the summit at fifteen thousand feet, I took a last survey of the enrapturing panorama in view, dominated by a sterile mountain of rock where the gullies were blocked with ice and snow. Descending through a forest of rhododendron with the trees in bloom, blighted by recent frosts, one of the yaks stumbled, owing to an ice-coated surface and a residue of snow, which remained on the north side, and two of my steel-trunks went tumbling down the slope also. Fortunately beyond a severe shaking, the yak was none the worse, and nowadays this efficient type of package having experienced previous dents, a few more made no difference.

The country traversed was wild in the extreme, but amply wooded. The torrent that kept us company was blocked with chunks of ice in its bed; but, as a result of melting snow above, the water was turbid and muddy from disintegrating banks. Arriving at a level stretch, I picked up the remains of a Leopard Cat,¹ with the skull intact and skin attached. Rhubarb²

¹ *Felis (Profelis) bengalensis* Kerr. A remarkable high altitude in distribution.

² *Rheum alexandræ*.

lined the level banks of a stream, which was crossed. A fine cascade, the first recollected, high on a mountain to our left, was tumbling over an expanse of rock in bold relief. Carrying on, a sharp descent through forest brought us in view of a watered plain, with excellent grazing for the innumerable yaks. The stream flowed to the east, within a wide gap in the mountains. Hence the trail was indefinable, and many fallen trees had to be crossed or circumvented before we reached a meadow where a number of villagers had gathered to await our arrival.

Most of us were feeling the effect of short rations on an unusually sultry day. However the fresh relay of villagers wished to proceed while there was plenty of light yet available. After paying for services rendered, a cheery greeting at parting ended our friendship with this batch of Wushi villagers. Probably as the result of his desire to pick a light load, one of the new arrivals received a flick from the Tibetan's whip, but this incident subsided without further bother and left no, apparent, bad feeling. It was evident that this Tibetan considered it his duty to supervise matters from now on, and he evidently knew what he was doing; while I emphatically resented any drastic methods, seeing that we were entirely in the hands of the villagers, who must have come from outlying country, as a house was not visible until the afternoon of the third day out. A long, level stretch ended in another expansive meadow, by name, Chiti, where we pitched camp near another wide, lateral valley on the west, commanded by a mountain-mass at its head.

A party of Eared-pheasants had been reported. Aloft, a Lämmergeyer sailed along on expansive wings; hardly had my tent been erected when a little Dove,¹ seen to perch on a tree close at hand, was obtained, the first record for this journey; and further it was quite unexpected at an elevation of 13,550 feet. A pen was improvised for a family brood of Eared-pheasant's chicks that had been brought from Wushi, but my attention to keep them alive was unavailing, as I feared; on the contrary dead, prepared, they were of no little scientific value. A further requisite, one of the boys obtained, a Hazel-hen,² which definitely

¹ *Oenopopelia tranquebarica humilis* (Temm.).

² *Tetrastes sewerzowi secunda* Riley.

decided me to stay, at least one day, or more, if it could be arranged. All were up early, and the most of us, who had no skin preparation to do, took out guns. On a patch of open ground, a party of Eared-pheasants in the distance looked more like a flock of sheep in repose, whereas there seemed every chance of our cutting off their retreat, by the time we had reached a knoll they were on the move up the steep, forested slopes; we further drew a blank, as all my Nashi shikari could produce on the following morning was a bunch of tail feathers which had been left in his grasp. We had better luck with the Hazel-hen,¹ and other two were added to my rapidly accumulating bird-collection. Too close to shoot without irretrievably damaging the specimen past recognition even with a dust cartridge and a .410 collecting gun, a Bush Warbler,² olive-brown, with a well-defined cap of chestnut brown, crept about the twigs of a dense, matted growth by a babbling stream, within easy reach, which I recognized as one of the rarest in the genus; formerly known as confined only to Nepal and Sikkim, but within recent years it had been obtained also in another part of Szechwan. This chance was lost, as it was never met with again. The small Striped-breasted Tit Babbler,³ first obtained on April 24,⁴ was represented by a few pairs.

My carriers implored me on bended knee not to stay further, as they had no food; this request was not to be refused, much as I would have liked to remain. Notwithstanding, the extra day was taken full advantage of, and numbers of a rare, heath butterfly⁵ had been netted that had not been taken previously so far as I recollected. The trail continued through the main valley when we crossed the onflowing river and struck a sharp, prolonged rise, which brought us out on snow-covered ground at 15,600 feet. Numerous, alpine flowers, and, in particular, a rich yellow poppy,⁶ were dotted about amongst the rocks. One of the Nashis caught a mouse-hare, and my time was fully occupied with the plants; with the

¹ *Tetrastes sewerzowi secunda* Riley.

² *Horeites major* Moore.

³ *Fulvetta striaticollis* (Verr.).

⁴ *Oeneis* sp? near *buddha* Gr.—Grsh. Taken later, but sparingly, on two occasions.

⁵ *Meconopsis integrifolia*.

exception of the White-collared Blackbird,¹ which had all the love for the wild moorland, similar to the western Ring-Ouzel, little else was noteworthy. A long descent ensued where, on both sides of the open valley for miles at a stretch, a dwarf, mauve rhododendron-shrub usurped the ground where no tree could withstand the wintry blasts. Our midday halt was at 14,000 feet, when the Cuckoo² was calling from the gullies, a thousand feet higher.

On our right, the mountains over which the trail ascended by the direct route were devoid of vegetation in either shrub or herbage. Numbers of yaks surrounded us, but little milk was obtainable. After some few miles had been traversed, the first sign of human life since leaving Wushi appeared with a few houses. Having crossed the stream on its descent, we came to a small *gomba*, Kusata, when one of the several youthful probationers intercepted me, holding a white silk scarf in one hand and a mouse in the other. How on earth did he know that I collected such things as mice, unless he had received previous intimation by some undreamt of means? Again, we had to cross this same stream, where a chance was not to be missed in collecting a number of specimens of a red pedicularis that lavishly adorned a spongy, water-logged bank. Failing to take the correct ford, one of the ponies, a tiny animal, fell, and with it again went two of my steel trunks, certainly not water-tight by this time. The village, said to be near at hand, we did not delay unnecessarily with inspection; though it was evident water had obtained contact with my supply of calcium carbide, by the strong odour of acetylene vapour, escaping.

Less pretentious in appearance and size, Chentze, at an altitude of 13,150 feet, might be designated a village where, after crossing the quaint, upper, wooden structure, our camp was fixed on a level greensward, a foot or so above the stream. Drying clothes, wet from the recent immersion, was easily accomplished before sunset; the lids of tins, containing my valuable supply of carbide, were in turn replaced. Villagers and lamas thronged round to participate in a diversion of unusual occurrence. Aziza managed to purchase the never rejected fowl and

¹ *Turdus kessleri* (Przew.).

² *Cuculus canorus bakeri* Hart. Recorded by Outram Bangs as this form.

eggs, along with a little greenstuff. I promptly paid off the carriers, compensating them with an additional, half amount for the day on which they had rested on my account, and with this, they were well pleased.

The Tree Sparrow¹ and Rock Dove² were again conspicuous, and specimens were collected. A fresh relay of ponies and carriers for the two, large boxes arrived in the morning, when an innovation to utilize my tent-poles, in lieu of the usual, on-the-back transportation, ended in one of the bamboo poles' giving way under the strain, as these would-be improvisers had been warned. The open valley shortly afterwards narrowed down into a wooded defile, where at this point a pair of Brahminy Duck,³ less wary than usual, was to be seen feeding on the newly sprouting shoots of the barley; and, when disturbed, they settled on the rocks above, seemingly an incongruous position of rest. My Nashi shikari managed to get one that eventually had dropped several hundred yards away. A stream of greater volume poured down over a declivitous rocky bed on our right, when both dipped between the abrupt, cave-studded hills of no great height. Hereabouts, the luxuriant vegetation within this warm retreat must have held some surprising examples of sub-tropical vegetation where, in exposed situations at a similar altitude, no tree was to be seen. At 12,700 feet the Brown Dipper⁴ again put in an appearance and possibly occurred higher. Hodgson's Flycatcher,⁵ the prevalent example in this genus, haunted the leafy boughs, detected by the orange-chestnut throat and slaty-blue upper plumage of the male; Willow-warblers were more numerous. After crossing to the right bank, the trail hugged the bank, with intermittent, restricted patches of level ground. Aroids appeared, like fantastic cobras, erect, with raised hood and long pendent tongue.

Startled momentarily to trip, the pony ahead caused the Nashi youth to lose his seat, when he turned a complete somersault and landed heavily on his back; he soon regained the saddle, on ground over which his pony would have

¹ *Passer montanus obscuratus* Jacobi.

² *Columba rupestris rupestris* Pall.

³ *Casarca ferruginea* (Pall.).

⁴ *Cinclus pallasii souliei* Oust.

⁵ *Muscicapula hodgsonii* (Verr.).

been better led. Repairs to the trail were in progress, so unusual an event that I readily paid my dues to the single labourer. Reaching the few, stone houses comprising the hamlet of Layla, at 12,400 feet, the animals were relieved of their loads, and we partook of food. My retinue laid out some money in purchase of welcome cereals. One of the ponies lay down fatigued with the morning's work, but its owner would only allow it the minimum of rest before he had it again on its feet. Reverting to the left bank, a small yellow-flowered rhododendron appeared; and, above the stream on the bank, which we had now left, bunches of crimson peonies were conspicuous, which meant a diversion for someone, as the stream was too deep and flowing too fast to allow of our wading across.

That afternoon we pitched camp at the mouth of a lateral valley near the village of Chaulu at 13,600 feet, when we were duly visited by the villagers and the few lamas from the lamasery. After watching us arranging and pressing plants, one urchin of tender years disappeared, to bring in amongst other blooms a bundle of the dwarf yellow rhododendrons that occurred in profusion, a short distance beyond our camp. In this kindly act, he showed much promise as a budding botanical collector; but this trait appeared to be well developed, by the children of this valley, in a passion for gathering flowers. Others joined in beetle and butterfly¹ collecting, though they were more usefully employed in uplifting and turning over the stones. A few Kites² were visible, and both colour-phase individuals, pied and black, of the Jackdaw.³ Atmospheric disturbances caused my aneroid to fluctuate, a proof that these readings can never be strictly accurate unless checked over a period with the temperature data, yet approximately correct. A storm burst within very quick time, and the rain found its way through the single inner fly of my tent.

The main stream was crossed next morning by a bridge; another, lateral torrent, coming down from the right, was similarly bridged. The same, entrancing defile kept us company; at our midday halt in the forest the Large Pied

¹ *Anthocharis cardamines thibetana* Oberth. *Satsuma chalybea* Leech. *Satsuma circe* Leech.—a single specimen, obtained for the last occasion. *Chrysophanus pang* Oberth. *Chrysophanus li* Oberth. *Pamphila flavostigma* Oberth.—a single specimen, met with nowhere else. Only three males in the B.M.

² *Milvus migrans melanotis* (Gray). ³ *Corvus dauuricus dauuricus* Pall.

Woodpecker¹ was to be observed, and the long-absent grating *kurrrr* of the Nutcracker² was to be heard. A Lämmergeyer³ passed overhead; on leaving, a Jay⁴ flew across into some mixed oak and rhododendron forest, gay with pink blooms, that provided an admirable setting to this vinaceous coloured bird with white rump and banded-black, bright blue wing-coverts, which tint of lovely blue in this form is extended over a larger portion of the wing than in the denizen of English woodlands. A subsidiary stream, descending on our right, was ascended and crossed, when we left the main stream. Whilst one of the boys obtained a fine Swallowtail butterfly⁵ in the stream-bed, another and I paid attention to a pair of Tree-creepers,⁶ flitting from tree to tree, working their habitual way up from the base of the trunk in a spiral course and with a jerky but methodical movement. On and about the ground was the little Daurian Redstart.⁷ Entering a defile on our left a few pairs of the Wren,⁸ the most in number to be met with anywhere in one restricted habitat, gave an indication of their presence, if not always seen against or under the tangle of decayed brushwood. Coming out on an open grassy bank, a number of insects⁹ were netted, which gave time for our caravan to appear, when a stiff climb ensued; and on dropping over the watershed and through forest, herds of yak were to be seen in the distance within a *cul-de-sac* on the mountain-side to our left.

Having arrived at our halting place, called Tauzyu by the villagers, we pitched camp in the forest, with the weather threatening and raw, at an elevation of 13,600 feet. Now, for the last occasion a wren¹⁰ had been seen, which, braving snow and wintry blast within its realm of remoteness, as doth fare this elusive, tail-upturned, mousy mite, stands high in

¹ *Dryobates major stresemanni* Rensch.

² *Nucifraga caryocatactes macella* Thayer & Bangs.

³ *Gypaëtus barbatus grandis* Storr.

⁴ *Garrulus glandarius sinensis* Swinh.

⁵ *Papilio machaon sikkimensis* Moore. Over one hundred specimens were later obtained.

⁶ *Certhia himalayensis yunnanensis* Sharpe.

⁷ *Phænicurus auroreus* (Pall.).

⁸ *Nannus troglodytes talifuensis* (Sharpe).

⁹ *Satsuma chalybea* Leech. *Chrysophanus pang* Oberth.

¹⁰ Evidently *Nannus troglodytes talifuensis* (Sharpe). The only wren met with throughout my journey; obtained at Ngulukö in Yunnan for the first occasion.

my esteem. Eared-pheasants were barking on the rugged ground to our left when my Nashi shikari stayed behind in a desperate resolve to obtain, at least one, which he eventually accomplished after his continued ill-success.

When we reached a widening of the valley, it was apparent we must bid farewell to the stream that at this point flowed into a river of extensive volume coming down from the right, called the Li chu, where, after skirting its left bank, we crossed by a suspension-bridge; after traversing its right bank for several hundred yards over much shale, dotted with primulas, we turned into a lateral, wooded valley, with a torrent flowing to join the main river between perpendicular, elevated crags. This river was kept in view for the rest of the day, and possibly it was the main affluent.

By noon we were at an altitude of 11,300 feet within the gorge where the Tibetan Tit¹ and the Pied Woodpecker² were representative of a number of interesting, ornithological occupants where flowers and insects were numerous. The ground commenced to rise sharply in unison with the fall of the river when, on reaching summit level, considerably above, the aspect of the country completely changed. The river was no longer a foaming torrent, but a placid, sinuous streak of water, meandering through a shallow, open valley, comprised of pastures, enclosed by rounded hills, typical of Tibetan country. Passing a small lamasery at which there was some pretence made to stay, the trail passed between stone walls, lined with pear trees, whose white blossom littered the ground like strewn confetti. The cuckoo's liquid note, seeming remarkably appropriate, resounded from the tops of the thinly scattered and robust trees that had escaped demolition in the past. Evidently regarded now with some sanctity by the villagers, as they formed little groups around the widely separated habitations. Numbers of these solidly built houses, however, were in a state of advanced decay. Alive with cockchafers, a flowering, thorny shrub, common hereabouts, presented a scene of animated insect life. Towers, built of stone, like the flat-roofed houses, conforming to no uniform shape in structure, yet more frequently with eight-cornered symmetrically angled buttresses, were a

¹ *Parus major tibetanus* Hart. Sporadically distributed north of Likiang.

² *Dryobates major stresemanni* Rensch.

prominent feature in the landscape. Some of these towers were in a sound state of preservation, but seldom showing traces of their original height; now they provided the breeding quarters for Jackdaws,¹ Rock Doves,² with the addition of a few pairs of White-rumped Swifts.³ Logs of a convenient size for handling choked the river; while on the adjacent bank huge stacks had been erected, preparatory to transportation by trail, as the river lower down could not further serve its practical purpose. This timber must have been felled in a region beyond, and most probably the forests, whence it had come, were seen by me in later travel.

The village of Zambaku had been in sight for a considerable distance; crossing the river, restricted here between boulders, on reaching the end of the suspension-bridge and the village, the headman, an aged and kindly soul, had taken the trouble out of politeness to meet and escort me to his residence, where good accommodation was provided on the roof and within a clean room. The Crested Bunting⁴ and the Neglected Bunting,⁵ with a few of the Common Rosefinch,⁶ one of the least plentiful to be met with, however, so far, and a pair of Reed-warblers⁷ flew in and out of the sparse hedges; while a few Pied-woodpeckers⁸ kept from prolonged observation, obscured by the foliage of the tree below, overlooking the river; where the Brown Dipper⁹ haunted its surface, to the exclusion of its white-breasted ally that had long been absent in recent journeys. As well as a Titmouse, a Shrike, and the Tree Sparrow, all of which were under observation on the following morning up to the time of our departure.

With a fresh relay of animals forthcoming the loads were adjusted outside, and we were soon under way when the valley opened out considerably into an expanse of river-bed, with intervening, pebbly patches, over whose surface were dotted tufts of rank grass and shrubs, which resembled an estuary

¹ *Corvus dauuricus dauuricus* Pall.

² *Columba rupestris rupestris* Pall.

³ Possibly *Micropus pacificus pacificus* (Lath.).

⁴ *Melophus lathamii* (Gray) = *melanicterus* (Gmel.).

⁵ *Emberiza godlewskii omissa* Roths.

⁶ *Erythrina erythrina roseata* (Blyth).

⁷ *Acrocephalus concinens concinens* (Swinh.).

⁸ *Dryobates major stresemanni* Rensch.

⁹ *Cinclus pallasii souliei* Oust.

at sea-level rather than a river-bed over 11,600 feet. It was such a scene and the like that was the reason for the charm of the Tibetan Borderland, inadequately expressed as inspiring. Taking a net I caught a number of feebly flying dragonflies at the edge of a pool, lined with thick grass. These insects are rare at high altitudes, and these captures most probably constitute a record at this altitude. Butterflies, represented by Tortoiseshells,¹ Clouded Yellows,² and little Blues³ were on the wing, either settling on the walls or flitting over the open expanse. Physical exertion had been minimized as the rise in the gradient was almost imperceptible. Numbers of towers were again prominent, and what appeared to be a lamasery or a commodious building could be descried on the opposite side of the main river. The Green Woodpecker⁴ put in an appearance, but such a one looked oddly out of place on the bare rock on the hillside where it had settled. Rock Doves⁵ were confiding, and in some numbers; when one of the boys, who had done practically no shooting previously, shaped very favourably. By midday we had arrived at the small, scattered village of Trazya at 12,100 feet, where we partook of food under the shade of the gnarled trees. Continuing up this subsidiary valley to the right that lost its open character to some extent, with the herbage remarkably fresh and green, the rise was slightly more pronounced, though Hajatungu, our next halt, was only 13,000 feet. With much of the ground under cultivation and well watered, the white, extended wings betrayed the Pond Heron,⁶ which had been noticed first at 12,800 feet, and not since Wushi, where a few occasionally frequented that valley; but a surprising extreme in altitudinal distribution, even in the summer months, pointing to a sufficiency of frogs and aquatic insects.

My retinue failed to augment their food supplies, and Aziza fared no better on my account; the lamas did not

¹ *Polygonia c-album* L.

² *Colias montium* Oberth.

³ *Lycæna lanty* Oberth. To mention other species: *Aporia cratægi* L. *Aporia martinetti* Oberth. *Anthocharis cardamines thibetana* Oberth. *Pieris rapæ* L. *Satsuma chalybea* Leech. *Chrysophanus li* Oberth. *Thanaos pelias* Leech.

⁴ *Picus canus setschuanus* Hesse.

⁵ *Columba rupestris rupestris* Pall.

⁶ *Ardeola bacchus* Bonap.

appear to be particularly friendly, and they chose to view our encampment from the walls of the lamasery, which allowed my work to proceed under more advantageous quietness. Shortage of firewood within easy reach had more than once happened; but, once the camp-fire was alight, Aziza set to work to soften the dehydrated potatoes, when, after considerable time had elapsed, he reported that these hardened substitute-flakes refused to respond. One Nashi collector brought in a Cuckoo,¹ but a wing was of considerable more interest that he had picked up on a path, which at the time I did not recognize as belonging to a (*Tetraophasis*) Snow Pheasant; it seemed rather like that of a female (*Gennaeus*) Kalij Pheasant, if so, it must have come from somewhere distant, farther south, unless there was a surprise in store. After a cross-examination, no further information was elicited; but, having been quick to detect the interesting nature of my surroundings, with the specimens already obtained, which included a rare snake, if at all possible I decided to stay.

However the next lot of carriers had arrived, and with the ever-present food shortage before me, I had to give way to entreaties; I gained my point that all of us should get out early to see what could be obtained, which meant a late start for the caravan, and to this arrangement the villagers readily agreed. A few Greater-spotted Woodpeckers² were collected, and I came upon Blood-pheasants,³ out of a party of which one was obtained, but I failed to get near enough for a shot at a party of Eared-pheasants, after a stiff climb. One of the boys, who had gone astray, flushed a Pipit off its nest which contained four eggs; on returning, a Cross-bill⁴ was an interesting addition as the male of a breeding pair. A satisfactory morning's work had been accomplished, but my promise had to be kept notwithstanding nothing had been seen of Snow-pheasants. Breakfast, finished, with everything ready that could be closed down in our absence, we were soon on the trail that continued to bear through the right-hand valley. The scenery became wilder as the forest was quitted.

¹ *Cuculus canorus bakeri* Hart.

² *Dryobates major stresemanni* Rensch.

³ *Ithaginis cruentus geoffroyi* Verr.

⁴ *Loxia curvirostra himalayensis* Blyth.

Comprised of villagers, yaks, and ponies, our caravan was laboriously occupied in traversing a long-drawn-out ascent, a trail with an execrable surface little better than that of a moraine, when I decided to forge ahead. On reaching the narrow gap on the summit of the Haja La at 15,300 feet, with the first gust of wind, over came a butterfly (*Parnassius*),¹ a genus not met with up to the present, but what I was particularly on the look-out for. Evidently my good fortune had arrived at last! When, on coming through the gap, I was held spellbound by the utter solitude and naked sterility of a range of mountains, fantastic in shape and outline. Much of the snow lying on the mountains in an eastward and north-eastward direction, however, would possibly not be permanent, though a big drift lay at my feet.

I had immediately to make the most of a double opportunity. Leaving my boys to the difficult task of netting as many insects as they could catch on the screes, hindered also by a high wind, I ascended the ground on my left, where a blue poppy (*Meconopsis*) was sparingly in evidence, working in the direction which would be most likely to disclose a more extensive view to the south-east; when, after gaining some two hundred feet, I was amply rewarded with a view of a pyramidal snow mountain, towering into the heavens, with a less imposing and more massive snow mountain nearer, to the left of it. A Griffon Vulture,² a solitary object in the sky, wended its way over untrodden and unknown regions of barren rock and ice. My camera had failed me before reaching Yungning, and previously I had resorted to my pencil and notebook in this unfortunate dilemma, yet I was determined to record in pencil outline the scene presented. Our combined efforts had resulted in the capture of small series of several *Parnassius* that had a tantalizing habit of dropping into the crevices between the slabs of rock when their wings were partially closed, resembling more the attitude of a moth, invariably facing the blasts of wind, and only a few could be netted on the wing. Two or three specimens of an orange-

¹ Four species of *Parnassius* were collected on this pass: *P. cephalus elwesi* Leech. *P. szechenyi germanæ* Austant. *P. orleans orleans* Oberth. *P. rothschildianus* sp. nov. Bryk. Vide *Novitates Zoologicæ*, vol. xxxvii. pp. 381-3, Felix Bryk.

² *Gyps himalayensis* Hume.

red-blotched *Zegris*,¹ never seen again, we failed to net.

Descending the pass, left with considerable regret on my part, but doubtless joyfully by others, we partook of food; and later, in the few brief minutes, available, turned over in quick time every stone within a limited area in a search for Carabid-beetles, at which we were fairly successful. Everyone, but myself, seemed to be in a desperate hurry; it was evident a feverish excitement, even if suppressed, at the thought of our near approach to the desired journey's end, had taken hold of my retinue. Snow-capped peaks, glittering in the sunshine, blocked our outlook to the north. I hung back and let the caravan descend the steeper declivity on this side of the pass, ever on the look-out for interesting specimens. On reaching the trough of the valley, no trail was visible to diverge on my right, as I thought, probable.

Closely packed, a group of the tall, yellow Tibetan poppy² made a striking splash of choice colour, contrasting with the absence of plant-life around. About this quarter an *Ac-centor*,³ a brightly coloured species of a sombre genus, was obtained, and also a Horned Lark,⁴ a typical alpine form. Returning to the trail, whose surface showed remarkable improvement, after a long, gradual descent we passed a couple, man and woman, of wayfarers, eating their frugal meal, with a solitary Magpie⁵ in attendance that one of the boys shot, as it appeared to be the high altitudinal race, with the long wing and apparent, short tail.

By the evening our camp was pitched off the trail at a recognized halt, named Patya, at 13,200 feet. Limited in extent, it had every appearance of a cattle-pen, so fouled was the ground. The mist had not lifted after a cold night as our caravan moved off, and soon the surface of the trail developed into little better than a rocky river-bed. Indeed, it was astonishing how the yaks managed to traverse it, in their hard struggle to cross from boulder to boulder. With

¹ Not recorded farther east than the Pamirs, but, as it could not possibly be confused with *Anthocharis*, there remains no other genus correspondingly coloured.

² *Meconopsis integrifolia*.

³ *Prunella fulvescens khamensis* Sushkin.

⁴ *Eremophila alpestris khamensis* (Bianchi).

⁵ *Pica pica bottanensis* Deless.

liberal sunshine prevailing, after joining the main trail used by the Lhasa-Batang caravans, in a short distance we had arrived at the far house in the village of Cheto (Jaydoh).

Deputing one of the boys to make an attack on the Swallow-tail butterflies,¹ settling on the muddy courtyard and beyond, where the puddles and muddy ground, caused by recent rain, were permeated with urine and churned by frequent caravans, he produced only a few captures when a few more might have been obtained. After a thorough 'clean-up' in the removal of my beard and a hot bath, I was ready to supplement his trivial attempt in a task at which others took a hand, though I had difficulty in restraining them from riding when so much was certainly to be missed. Ahead, towered a range of barren rock, glacier and perpetual snow of dazzling brilliance, wreathed in fleecy clouds. The torrent was crossed and recrossed below the village within a short distance; and, on the latter occasion, by a stone arch, the first seen since leaving Likiang, where the tumultuous, torrential waters threw up sparkling jets of spray, as they pounded the huge boulders within its bed. Traces of the perilous old trail might be detected on the perpendicular crags to the left. On the right hand a pair of Snow-pigeons² was to be observed, and they must have had a brood in a crevice; a Whistling-thrush,³ a meritorious songster, in colour an indigo blue, slipped off its nest below, where the valley now partook of a gorge. A short sharp rise and then commenced a long descent. An Elegant Pheasant was espied above the trail at this unusual hour of the day in the brilliant sunshine; but most eyes were directed ahead to the bottom of the deep valley where we anticipated the town of Tachienlu would lie, but not yet visible. Tachienlu proved to be farther away than expected, owing in a measure to the rarity and clarity of the atmosphere; but rather from the wish to minimize space.

At last another corner turned, on crossing another stone bridge, more lengthy than the last, the rough surface

¹ *Papilio machaon sikkimensis* Moore.

² *Columba leuconota gradaria* Hart.

³ *Myiophoneus eugenei* Hume.

below the former site of the town, now strewn with rocks, in time led us to the gates when the narrow street was slowly threaded through a crowded populace to our quarters that Mr and Mrs R. Cunningham of the C.I.M. had so kindly placed at my disposal.

That evening I dined off a luscious yak steak, with little or no concern for the poor beast. Should death have occurred from natural causes, my appetite was equal to the occasion. Boots, tent-poles, &c., had to be repaired; paper for drying botanical specimens, purchased; presses for preparing plants, made; tobacco supply, replenished—for some time the local substitute had filled a void, and it would have to do so. A daily supply of vegetables reached me from my kind hosts. The services of a barber were requisitioned. Whether it is a case of complete loss of control under the will of an expert, dexterous with a sharp razor, or a fatalistic regard for the inevitable—once in the Chinese barber's chair there can be no escape from an ordeal—so comprehensive as to embrace one's eyelids and cheeks; and, after this expert had voluntarily shaved the top of my head that little mattered, as I had little to loose, I verily believe he would not have left a hair on my face, if the choice had been his; completing his task by probing my ears.

Owing to a miscalculation, I was two days in advance of the calendar on my arrival, actually it was June 1.¹ My two specimen-boxes had been carefully carried on the backs of villagers, up mountain and down valley, a distance of 550 miles—a creditable and remarkable performance, later to be carried another 150 miles to Yachou; for which no credit is mine, as they were not handled by myself. (O that it were possible for Occidentals—employees of Shipping Companies, in particular—to profit by this example of careful handling!) Aziza's prophecy that I should have to discard them on the way had proved false. Neither was it an illusion when my cherished 'briar' was obviously in Aziza's mouth. What had become of the pair of pipes he had received, mattered not; but I objected to my property being smoked and handed

¹ No alteration has been made in my itinerary, as my specimens are dated accordingly. The discrepancy is accounted for by my leaving camp, after a sojourn of many days at various places, two days ahead of the calendar.



(Upper) THE SLOPES OF THE SNOW MOUNTAIN SATSETÖ—THE SOUTHERNMOST SNOW MOUNTAIN ON THE CONTINENT OF ASIA. P. 39.

(Lower) "THE TRAIL RAN PARALLEL TO THE MOUNTAIN-MASS TO AFFORD A PANORAMIC VIEW." P. 46.

round—no wonder mine had been lost! Cables were dispatched to my wife and others, announcing arrival and results. I had yet to receive intimation from the main party that they had arrived at Yunnanfu, far in the south on May 1.

CHAPTER V

IN AND AROUND TACHIENLU

TACHIENLU is the eastern outpost of Tibet, and notwithstanding the country lying as far as Batang to the west is politically, China; ethnologically, the people are Tibetan; zoologically, the fauna is distinct; while the rolling and expansive grasslands, characteristic of Tibetan country, have no counterpart in China, proper. The town is bisected by a torrent, a foaming turmoil when in spate, spanned by three bridges. It is the emporium for the Yachou tea trade to the west, and the Tibetan skin trade to the east. The Roman Catholic Mission has been early established. Bishop Girandeu was in charge, having completed a residence of fifty-one years. I found him a well-preserved, retiring man; while Pères Valentin and Charrier were an equally pleasant and urbane type of priest, ever ready to furnish me with whatever information was at their disposal. Père Valentin had been resident for twenty-five years, and Père Charrier was acquainted with the interior through a wide experience.

Another day was ushered in by the tolling of the Chapel bell, as a reminder to Catholic devotees of their obligations, even though the gate without did bear the tiresome invective: 'Down with the foreigner', scrawled in chalk in the Chinese characters. The report from a rifle shot announced the beginning of the day's routine at the barracks; while the grunts and drones from spiral and attenuated instruments, resounding from the lamasery, might seem to be supplementary to groans from drowsy and lethargic inmates. Less ostentatious in ritual, the China Inland Mission and the Seventh Day Adventist Mission catered also for the spiritual, and, in the latter Institution, for the bodily welfare of the people when Dr and Mrs Andrews seldom could have been otherwise

employed. Mr J. Huston Edgar of the C.I.M., a traveller of considerable experience in the Tibetan Borderland, who, on recent furlough, had undertaken a hazardous journey to Lake Amadeus in Central Australia, lost no time in making my acquaintance. Two of my Nashi collectors, in accordance with prearranged plans, desired to return with their acquaintances and relatives of an out-going caravan, and I readily acquiesced; though I was unconvinced by the 'evergreen' cock-and-bull story, confirmed by the fictitious letter from a former master that was produced in evidence, which had to some extent unsettled the rest. Mr and Mrs Cunningham allowed no time to elapse when they extended to me their hospitality at their own home, and I vacated my present quarters that had served me for the last few days so excellently.

The attractions of the bazaar proved irresistible for all my retinue; and, while no objection could be raised against a purchase of useful clothes or even boots where sandals had been good enough before, interest flagged in work; but, if my collection of mammals and birds did not increase at the customary rate of progress, a very satisfactory addition¹ was made to the number of insects, already obtained.

Following² on rain, such a morning when the balmy atmos-

¹ The list of butterflies obtained around Tachienlu and Cheto comprises the following additional records: *Aporia davidis* Oberth. Cheto, June 12. *Aporia venata* Leech. Twenty specimens from Cheto. *Pieris melete* Mén. *Pieris rapæ* L. *Synchlōë dubernardi* Oberth. *Neope agrestis* Oberth. Cheto, rare. *Ypthima beautei* Oberth. Six taken between Cheto and Tachienlu. *Callerebia pratorum* Oberth. Tachienlu in August. *Parage dumetorum* Oberth. Tachienlu in July. *Neptis pryeri* Btlr=*arboretorum* Oberth. One specimen, August 16. *Neptis mahendra extensa* Leech. *Limenitis homeyeri venata* Leech. Not common. *Pyrameis cardui* L. Sporadically distributed. *Vanessa antiopa* L. Only tattered specimens in June. *Polygonia c-album* L. Cheto. *Argynnis adippe ornatissima* Leech. Tachienlu July 11. Uncommon. *Argynnis paphia megalegoria* Fruhst. Tachienlu July 10. Single specimen, obtained nowhere else. *Argynnis laodice samana* Fruhst. Obtained on August 9. More plentiful to the east. *Chrysophanus li* Oberth. *Everes zuthus* Leech. *Lycæna lanty* Oberth. Taken for the last occasion on June 8. *Lycæna felicis* Oberth. Uncommon. *Lycænopsis (Cyaniris) oreas* Leech. Twenty-four specimens taken around Tachienlu in July. *Papilio eurous* Leech. Taken on June 19-22. *Pamphila dieckmanni gemmata* Leech. Two males. *Pamphila micio* Oberth. *Thanaos pelias* Leech. Widely spread to the south. *Pyrgus (Hesperia) maculatus thibetanus* Oberth. Uncommon, but met with as far south as Yungning. The rare moth, *Rhopalopsycha nycteris* Koll., was obtained on June 8, with *Hæmorrhagia beresowskii* Alphér. June 19-22.

² Referred to in the *Proceedings* of the Entomological Society of London, p. 66, 1930.

phere reveals every indication of an early outburst of fierce sunshine, in the compound below were numerous, white, black and yellow-blotched butterflies,¹ tardily flitting and settling on the ground that had been vacated by our ponies. Generally considered to be protected by a distasteful body fluid, I was surprised to see a number of sparrows² making a determined onslaught on them when previously I had regarded them as immune from predatory attacks by birds. (Nature has a provoking habit of refuting one's preconceived idea of what ought or ought not to take place.) Having no desire to draw the attention of more urchins, some of whom had already joined in with the sparrows, I did not descend to add my presence in further disturbing an interesting episode that continued, however, long after the insects had dispersed to other corners of the compound. The impression received of this unwarranted attack was that the sparrows could not resist the temptation, so lethargic were the butterflies in flight, as the onslaught was made in the air.

I looked forward to returning and pitching my camp on the Haja La, with the object of adding other specimens of high-altitudinal species of insects, as well as *Parnassius*, of which genus more specimens were desirable. The weather had unfortunately recently broken, yet I readily agreed to accompany Cunningham to Cheto, where he intended taking his scholars to spend many hours in the refreshing, hot, sulphurous springs above the village. We left on June 10, which turned out a pouring wet day, and by the time we reached our quarters, both of us had got well drenched. Not having had a sufficient respite after my long strenuous journey, and worse still—an indifference to wet clothes—later, I suffered for it from a chill that had not been cast off on my return. (Some travellers never learn and are prone to carelessness in matters of health, failing to take the simplest precautions !)

Marauders, supposedly Tibetan, had looted a house on our way, the night before our departure; and, in answer to a summons or request for assistance from the Tachienlu authorities to trace the culprits, a number of villagers, armed with any and every weapon to hand, passed through Cheto on their

¹ *Aporia bieti* Oberth.

² *Passer montanus obscuratus* Jac.

way south. But we learned no arrest resulted from either their efforts or those of the Chinese soldiers, dispatched on the same errand ; too late to be of practical use, as the ' birds had flown ' and were by now ' over the hills and far away '.

General collecting was done in spite of the adverse weather ; however, owing to the presence of persistent, overhanging clouds on the Haja La, and not in the best of trim myself, I considered, in the absence of sunshine, it would be a waste of time to attempt my projected trip to that altitude. With the exception of a detour along the Gi La, when Ming-sän found his pony had strayed, and only after hours of searching it was located, when we were successful in plant collecting along the stream where the giant rheum flourished, to return drenched by the way we had gone, which trail was little better now than a moraine, covered in running water, I confined my attentions to localities nearer to hand.

We were fortunate in obtaining quarters, on the ground-floor of the hostel. Pigs wandered in and out of the neighbouring room where Aziza did his cooking, and it was suggested that a sly kick on his part had caused one of the pigs to show palpable signs of an early death, with what truth it was difficult to say ; while an admonition was needed to those who persisted in saying that ' Mussli ' was guilty of this act as it would necessarily mean that they would be also involved, however much disliked. Meanwhile the unfortunate pig was undergoing drastic treatment to get it on its feet, and it appeared to be suffering from debility or a fit. Blowing smoke up its nose having produced no effect, eventually its nose was slit with a knife that had the effect, at all events, of getting it into an upright posture. The last that was seen of it was its being coaxed at snail pace to an adjacent yard, where the inflating operation would be necessary for this scraggy animal.

Apparently, interest flagged towards the week-end, and there was not the same keenness in the morning and afternoon bath as at the beginning ; yet all appeared to have benefited. It had been an outing for which the parents had given their permission, and they ought to have been very grateful. The Elegant or Black-necked Pheasant had been seen, but never for any length of time, and higher up towards the Cheto Pass, the White-eared Pheasant was in evidence.

Nearing Tachienlu on our return, June 15, the White-breasted Dipper was seen in the bed of a small torrent below the trail, quite unexpectedly, as the Brown Dipper monopolized the main river up to and beyond Cheto ; the same condition of distribution occurred in the other valley to the south, where nine days later I was to make another camp.

If any proof was needed of the difficulties of travel, involved by latent dangers, but fortunately of unusual occurrence, yet liable to happen, the experiences of Mr and Mrs Duncan (returning from furlough and now on their way to Batang) on their outward journey viâ Atuntzü to Yunnan, when they were subjected to a fusilade and robbed of everything they possessed, must have been an ordeal to last a lifetime. And almost as amazing was how they had got their two infant children and themselves out alive through a malarial region, during the period of torrential rain. I was fortunate to get at first-hand their authentic account.

June 19 was fixed for the races, when the whole Tibetan populace, under penalty of a fine for non-attendance, who could or could not spare the time, with some Chinese residents who were exempt, flocked up the mountain-side to the south, where, on a shelf, a limited amount of flat ground some eight hundred feet above the town, denoted the starting point. Eventually lined up in some sort of order, the Tibetan Derby commenced with about a dozen, chosen ponies and their bare-back riders ; and, if a false start had been allowed, it was of no consequence should a few over-zealous supporters of their particular favourite join in with sticks to urge on the ponies, all but exhausted, nearing the winning post that was about a quarter mile up the steep acclivity. After a palaver, the winner was adjudicated, and the first three led in for the small awards ; while the élite retired to the marquee for tiffin, to partake of which the Occidental visitors, comprising Dr Andrews and his eldest son, Messrs Duncan and Cunningham, and myself had been kindly invited.

A Chinese *yen hui* can be a sumptuous display of courses ; but, though the occasion was considered a Tibetan fête, apparently no Tibetan member of the community took a seat at the table ; neither had the repast any weird surprises in store, which consisted of the ordinary light yet redundant helpings of rice and other farinaceous worm-like edibles, with

the additional, enticing, roasted nuts. I was thus debarred on this occasion from such delicacies as birds'-nest soup, sharks' fins, or what some, truthful travellers have so fortunately viewed, if not partaken: the immature, white mice, devoid of hair, to be dipped in syrup or perhaps honey to accelerate the downward trend after an adroit adjustment by the tip of the tail, this unctuous morsel then expeditiously wriggles down a straight gullet. However, not moving in high Celestial Society myself, who knows what other chances are missed; and how many, equally succulent delicacies are shunned through ignorance and prejudice! Here, then, is one neglected source for a courageous epicure to test his capacity for a dainty, which must be equally as slippery as the highly esteemed mollusc!

On June 24 I departed for the hamlet of Wali, about twelve miles to the south, leaving all extraneous baggage behind. As we had proceeded beyond the lower hamlet of Ulongkong, there was very likely to be difficulty in securing quarters, owing to a paucity of houses, but we managed to obtain a room with a boarded floor, and less than the minimum of light, owing to the surrounding wall rising above and abutting within a couple of feet of the usual small opening. I should have been very comfortable, had it not been for the smoke from the fires in the neighbouring rooms, which could not find egress through the roof. The broken weather continued with intermittent periods of sunshine. Although at a time of the year and within a region under the influence of the south-west monsoon, rain-storms periodically swept the valley from the north, when the temperature dropped considerably.

Speedily I became acquainted with the few trails that led to diverse haunts: one ascended to a diminutive tarn of crystal clearness, with no apparent outlet. In a blind hollow hard by, choked with tall, purple irises, and clusters of orange primulas¹ with long stem, the rumbling of invisible water seemed like muffled voices in conclave; at the sound of which the boys, in spite of my explanation, placed more credence on their superstitious dread of demons.

A small party of Eared-pheasants frequented the impenetrable belt of prickly oak beyond; and, at times, entered

¹ *Primula cockburniana*.

the pine and rhododendron tract that lined one flank of a narrow cleft, lavishly overgrown with innumerable, flowering plants. Occasionally when disturbed, with visibility poor, they would rise and sometimes settle in pairs on the upper branches of the conifers, ever conscious of danger lurking below. A cock Monal¹ nose dived through the mist at an almost incredible speed; but, with this exception, and that of a female, devoid of the brilliant adornments of the male, yet equally beautiful, that I unexpectedly flushed almost at my feet and badly missed, I never set eyes on this gorgeously attired rarity again. Both the Elegant Pheasant and the Lady Amherst Pheasant occurred around the hamlet, and two chicks of the former were taken from some urchins who must have raided a brood, while the latter was the less plentiful. A Blood Pheasant was obtained with my .410 bore collecting gun, as on the last occasion, never shy in thick cover, shot at close range; representing five species of pheasants to be observed or obtained within a radius of a mile or so. None was ever obtrusive, but seldom a day passed without one of them being in evidence to sight or hearing. The Hazel-hen was again obtained, to be met with afterwards for the last time in the extreme north of my travels. Gould's Grey-headed Thrush would perch on the topmost branch of a juniper, and, especially after rain, it would pour forth its ill-sustained, yet sweet trill; and a nest containing two eggs, evidently the complete clutch, was found farther afield. A pair of Tomtits² flew in and out of a crevice in the walls of my abode, when, by June 27, six, red-brown, spotted and freckled, white eggs had been laid. A few Shrikes³ had nests containing young, and brooded in perilous proximity to a trail, irregularly used by fuel carriers; when this misplaced confidence led to annihilation by a vandal, unknown. The full complement was not more than two, ring-spotted eggs in any of the compactly constructed nests. A Scimitar Babbler,⁴ differing from the one obtained at Baurong, frequented the dense scrub, but it was scarce. Snow Pigeon, to the number of fourteen or fifteen, were partial to an open stretch, and they had a predilection

¹ *Lophophorus lhuysii* Verr. & Geoff.

² *Parus major tibetanus* Hart.

³ *Lanius tephronotus* (Vig.).

⁴ *Pomatorhinus maccllellandi gravivox* David.

for the boulder-strewn ground in the vicinity of the hot sulphur-springs, in the bed of the torrent below; where I obtained numbers of a large *Cicindela* or tiger-beetle, active on the wing in the hot sunshine.

Amusing yet perplexing, a lama, freshly emerged from a bath—that infrequent ordeal—invigorated in body and elated in mind, hugged me in an ursine embrace, to the astonishment of Ming-sän who was also accompanying me for a dip.

Minivets,¹ with the males in steely black and crimson red, replaced in the female in like manner on the throat, breast, and barred wings with yellow, flitted about the tree tops, but only in small numbers and at rare intervals; fittingly spoken of farther west as the *Raja lall* and the *Rani chara*. A magnificent specimen of the Lämmergeyer² was obtained higher up the valley, an adult, with the rusty wash suffused over the whole breast: what can compare in brilliance to the pale yellowish-stone iris, with the blood-red sclerotic membrane! My boys, Aziza excluded, demolished the carcass between them, on the supposition that a bird of such power and expanse of wing must likewise impart its strength to them. I have partaken of a varied assortment of food in my time, from squirrels, dry but tasty, to bamboo-rats, succulent yet nauseous; but I have a repugnance to carrion feeders, however noble of aspect and majestic in flight! The Large Hawk Cuckoo,³ one of the brain-fever birds, would pour forth its volume of sound, sometimes at night, but more often in the early morning after rain; which reiteration probably emanated from the male of a solitary pair. The Cuckoo⁴ was more obtrusive; and, when at 13,500 feet, I shot a female with an oviduct egg on July 1, where two others were seen about the same time. The Alpine Chough,⁵ all black with a short yellow bill and red feet, was only observed on a moraine above the Yajajen Pass at 14,500 feet, in a party of twenty or thereabouts, and they never came to a lower altitude.

It had been my intention to continue jumping over the boulders, huge in size and varied in contour, when a slip

¹ *Pericrocotus brevirostris ethologus* Bangs & Phillips.

² *Gypaëtus barbatus grandis* Storr.

³ *Hierococcyx sparverioides* (Vigors).

⁴ *Cuculus canorus bakevi* Hart.

⁵ *Pyrrhocorax graculus* (L.).

meant a drop into a crevice out of which one might extricate oneself with the greatest difficulty—if, indeed, one had not already disappeared beyond all help—in order to reach the rugged peaks above, when I had hoped to descend at my return directly onto Wali. The encroaching mist put an end to this scheme; and, as it was, I suffered later from a slight ankle sprain. Thus, after collecting an Alpine Accentor,¹ one of a solitary pair, which fortunately lay on the face of the boulder when shot, I turned my attention to the gentians and other delicate, massed rock plants, in admiration; with a bed of the poppy (*Meconopsis integrifolia*) that had usurped all the available space within a hollow, comprising about a quarter of an acre. Descending to the shallow tarn, the largest and most concealed of five on this flank, another moraine was traversed that ended abruptly in a tangle of gnarled rhododendron into which we plunged; and, almost impenetrable, only slight headway could be made in our retarded movements. Gaining the less dense, dwarf brushwood eventually, numbers of a *Parnassius*² and other butterflies were netted on a small mauve coloured rhododendron; and the Blue-fronted Redstart³ was observed, accompanied by its spotted youngsters. A party of Snow Partridges,⁴ too far off to attempt to reach, had to remain a pleasant memory, as never another opportunity came my way. Taking a number of shoots of a white heather or heath (*Vaccinium*), by this time the boy and I were well laden, as we had taken toll of the various primulas and the two cypripediums, which littered a patch of formerly burnt ground on our ascent.

Mock orange with pungently scented, waxy-white flowers; Buddleia, lilac, and rarely white; with dog-roses⁵ of dainty shades of red; and scores of other flowering shrubs were intermixed with less prominent vegetation along the mountain-flanks within easy reach of my quarters. After rain, a strong smell of sulphur pervaded a section of the landslide over which a trail passed to a meadow, where a large

¹ *Prunella collaris berezowskii* Serebr. Adult female 15,000 feet, July 2, 1929.

² *Parnassius orleans orleans* Oberth.

³ *Phænicurus frontalis* Vig.

⁴ *Lerwa lerwa major* Meinertz.

⁵ *Rosa stevensii* sp. nov., described by Dr Alfred Rehder of the Arnold Arboretum.

toad sought refuge in the dense herbage. A party of hunters, Lolos, took up a temporary sojourn, but, apart from a young serow, the yapping dogs managed to pull down nothing else. Debilitated visitors arrived to recuperate at the shrine of cleanliness. A few hares¹ skipped about the outskirts of the brushwood, and rootings of a wild boar were to be frequently observed in its nocturnal haunts. A Musk Deer,² a mercilessly persecuted animal, was snared by my host, but too badly damaged about the mask and legs to be worthy of a complete preparation, though the intact skull was saved. Of larger game, a female Sambár,³ with the hind-quarters almost chocolate black, was taken unawares when it stood motionless for several seconds, giving me time to call up one of the boys with my binocular, and momentarily it bounded up the steep acclivity, disappearing from sight.

Burning of green juniper twigs, a simple ceremonial, outside, added a further quota of obnoxious fumes to what already persisted inside; as a number of small mammals,⁴ inclusive of a single specimen of a Shrew⁵ had been obtained, with a selection of Salamanders, and very likely nothing further of importance to be obtained without a prolonged stay, I bade farewell to the yak herdsman who had supplied me with milk, and who wished me to accept the hospitality of his tent whenever I chose to gain the crest of the pass. While the weather had not been favourable for views of the mountain-tops, I had seen the summit of the rarely revealed Minya Gonka for a brief interval when, looking in a south-western direction through a rift of stupendous peaks, it was disclosed as having an abrupt, slanting face, while the opposing northern side was almost vertical, with a slightly inclined summit. Further, the trail by which my companions had reached Tachienlu had been located and traversed for some little distance.

Lolos, passing through, suggested my going to their village, Moshemien, some two days' journey away, not marked on

¹ *Lepus comus grahami* A. B. Howell.

² Possibly *Moschus moschiferus sifanicus* Büchner.

³ *Rusa unicolor dejeani* Pousargues.

⁴ *Dremomys pernyi griselda* Thomas. *Rattus confucianus* Milne-Edwards.

⁵ *Chodsigoa smithi* Thomas.

my map, where they said monkeys¹ occurred; but I had already made provision for my return, though keeping this place in view. After fourteen days' stay we left, and on the way picked up a large green snake and several rare butterflies². So far my lamp, tried both at Wushi and at Wali, had failed to attract any moths, worthy of notice, either in number or rarity. Undisturbed, the edelweiss (*Leontopodium*) carpeted the bank over which we had come and now descended; when, after passing the lamasery where, below, a cremation was being crudely performed in unrestricted view of passers-by, and, later, the parade-ground where the local troops had assembled to be reviewed by General Ma, we were once more within the crowded thoroughfare *en fête* for the war-lord, whom we met on ponyback.

The list of butterflies obtained at this camp between Ulongkong and Wali comprises:

Aporia crataegi L. Uncommon.

Aporia bieti Oust. Extremely common.

Aporia martinetti Oberth. Probably an aberration of *A. bieti*, not common but met with elsewhere as far south as Wushi and as far north as Kwanchai.

Metaporja procis Leech. Four specimens only.

Metaporja lotis Leech. Obtained nowhere else, one specimen July 5.

Metaporja goutelli Oberth. Only a single specimen, which was more plentiful at Cheto in June and common at Wushi in May.

Metaporja peloria Hew. Uncommon, July 4. Obtained in singles at Cheto and Tailing.

Colias fieldii chinensis Verity. Common.

Anthocharis cardamines thibetana Oberth. Not too plentiful.

Anthocharis bieti Oberth. Rare, obtained also at Cheto and Tailing.

Ypthima motschulskyi perfecta Leech. Rare, only obtained around Tachienlu, four specimens in all.

Ypthima methorina Oberth. Not too plentiful, only obtained around Tachienlu with the exception of a single record for Kopadi, in the south on April 11.

Melanargia halimede Mén. Twenty-one specimens in all. More plentiful elsewhere. Recorded for North China, Mongolia and South Siberia.

Pararge thibetana Oberth. Not uncommon around Tachienlu.

¹ Probably *Macaca mulatta lasiotus* Gray. Reported at Muli, and the pelt seen on occasions with the natives.

² Including *Limenitis populi* L., which agrees with Central European specimens and not with *albomaculata* Leech, of West China and East Tibet.

- Cænonympha semenovi* Alph. Fairly common.
- Limenitis coltoni* Oberth. Common and widely spread.
- Limenitis sinensium* Oberth. Rare, only met with at Wali and at Cheto, when five specimens were obtained.
- Pyrameis indica* Hbst. Also obtained around Tachienlu.
- Pyrameis urticae chinensis* Leech. With the exception of Wushi, only obtained at Cheto and around Tachienlu.
- Melitæa agar* Oberth. Extremely common.
- Argynnis gong* Oberth. Common.
- Argynnis aglaia besa* Fruhst. Plentiful.
- Hyporion princeps* Oberth. Two specimens of this rare species were taken at Wali on July 4, obtained later on August 9, when a single specimen was taken between Chingshui and Meipong on August 19.
- Hyporion lama* Leech. Six specimens, and met with later, on only one occasion at Kwanchai, when one was taken on July 29.
- Thecla v-album* Oberth. Uncommon, also at Tachienlu.
- Zephyrus bieti* Oberth. In some numbers.
- Chrysophanus pang* Oberth. Plentiful.
- Chrysophanus standfussi* Gr.-Grsh. Uncommon.
- Zizera minima magna* Ruhl. Rarely seen, out of the five specimens obtained, three were taken at Cheto on June 14, and one at Kopadi on April 11.
- Lycæna pheretes* Hbnr. Common.
- Lycæna eros helena* Gr.-Grsh. Widely spread in Tibetan country, but only a single specimen taken at Wali.
- Carterocephalus (Pamphila) flavomaculatus* Oberth. Numerous, thirty-one males.
- Pamphila silvius houangty* Oberth. Not uncommon, twelve males, two females.
- Pamphila niveomaculatus* Oberth. Widely spread, twenty-one males.
- Erynnis (Thanaos) pelias* Leech. Uncommon, more plentiful to the south.
- Achalarus (Lobocla) simplex* Leech. Rare, also obtained at Tachienlu.
- Ochlodes (Augiades) subhyalina tibetana* Oberth. Uncommon.
- Augiades sylvanus sylvanoides* Leech. Plentiful only around Tachienlu. Twenty males, two females.
- Hasora unura* De Nice. Widely spread but never plentiful. July 4, single.
- Halpe bivitta*. Oberth. Obtained at Cheto. June 14.

Some time must elapse before a full report is available of the plants collected, but Dr Johann Matfield of Berlin has described as new, in Fedde's Repertorium, a handsome plant of the saxifrage family called *Astilbe heteropetala*, and from the Botany School, Cambridge, occurs "specimens of a little-known *Epimedium* (*E. elongatum* Kom.) which have been lent to me for naming. . . . Very little is known about the distribution of this plant; it has been collected only twice before." (W. T. Stearn. in litt.).

CHAPTER VI

ON THE TIBETAN UPLANDS

ARRANGEMENTS were concluded for a journey to the Tibetan uplands when I was joined by Mr J. Huston Edgar, who had on former journeys accompanied Col. F. M. Bailey, the late Mr E. H. Wilson, Dr H. Weigold, and others. As it was not intended to proceed beyond an easy stage on the first day, our caravan, comprised of ponies with the addition of two under-sized cows, did not leave until late. Nearing the south gate, the first intimation to greet me of the changing East was a youth putting my pony through its paces up and down the street; self-satisfied, no doubt, at his own importance, having ridden a pony and used a saddle belonging to a foreigner, without permission, in which Laoyang had under protest acquiesced.

Bidding farewell to my friends, the Cunninghams, and distributing alms to each of the beggars, afflicted with some of the worst ailments of humanity, leprosy included, we were back on our trail to Cheto, where we arrived in the afternoon when the hot tea came in very welcome after a decidedly warm, if not sweltering, morning. Laosang, Tibetan yak-driver, a misnomer at the time, seeing that he was driving the two cows laden with my companion's literature, duly arrived; when, after the requisite halt we resumed, striking to the right towards the Cheto pass where, after about three miles covered, we pitched camp at 13,000 feet. Additionally to a Pica, not numerous around Tachienlu, seen above the village, a nice selection of rock plants and butterflies¹ were obtained along the trail, though no birds had been collected. But the views of the mountains, on looking back, if wreathed in

¹ Including *Zephyrus minerva* Leech. A single specimen, met with nowhere else. Recorded for Ichang at low limits in June.

clouds, had given me many a glimpse of dazzling glacier and perpetual snow. The turn in the trail had blotted out this portion of the range; and, with the exception of the immediate prospect, nothing was visible to the north, as the summit of the pass was, as before, when it was traversed a month ago, blocked to view by mist.

The morning opened fine. My companion reported that he had had a comfortable night on his improvised mattress of brushwood, wet when cut, covered with my ground-sheet to counteract any rising damp, as he had preferred not to bring a stretcher. The trail, even worse than lower down, could only be adequately described as atrocious, and by midday we were still below the crest of the pass. Gay with flowers in a previous riot of colour, now the most were past their zenith; with a blue poppywort whose seed was collected, scattered in its habitat, yet numerous.

After setting traps for a marmot, whose presence had been announced by several shrill whistles, somewhat resembling a boatswain's pipe, and, though few, so far, had been seen: 'Jhagha', a black and tan Tibetan collie, inappropriately named from outward form only, leaving her master, Laosang, had scented them more than once from afar; when an upright posture quickly followed by a recumbent dive into a capacious burrow, typical of this large, tawny-orange rodent with the harsh pelt, ended in 'Jhagha's' unostentatious deviations from the trail, all to no purpose. Instructing Laoyang, who could best be spared, to supervise the traps; the trail direct to Pamei was left aside, as our caravan continued in the direction of Batang.

Cairns of stones (*labchá*), an accumulation from many devout pilgrims and equally weary travellers, more often faced with slabs, covered with closely packed inscriptions, and known as *obo* or *manidrombo*, and *mendong* in Sikkim, had been more numerous than habitations throughout the sway of Lamaism; every commanding summit on my trail produced the usual number of prayer-scrolls—a relief to see by jaded mortals on many an occasion—hanging, tattered in the wind, surrounded by rags and sticks, placed there to propitiate the guardians of these inhospitable tracts, or merely as tokens of a time-honoured custom; this site proved no exception.

Rather than descend with the caravan, my boys accom-

panied me along the flank of the hills on our left when, on getting into scanty brushwood, to my surprise, at over 15,000 feet, I was rewarded by two, interesting, green frogs, remote from water; while numbers of alpine¹ butterflies flitted rapidly about, which meant the exercise of much leg and arm effort, with small results in compensation. However, Ming-sän waited behind and he secured two hares, which seemed to be more in evidence than usually so; but I failed to get specimens of the few Chats,² never plentiful, and interesting as a breeding species at this altitude. A stream on our left kept us close company when, on reaching a low-roofed house, a further halt gave me ample time to study a group of sparrows,³ established in so many, diverse situations sporadically throughout the country, traversed, that it became habitual to find out first whether this pert attendant on man's domicile, harmless rather than harmful, where there was little to destroy, did or did not occur at our various halts.

A bend to the right in the trail took us through pools of water, when a valley was entered, sparsely inhabited, with gentle undulations, corresponding with the steady flow of a river, so rarely absent, frequented by a Goosander⁴ (seen in the first instance on the Plain of Yungning), and where the Ibisbill⁵ (previously seen on the river to the east of Tachienlu) occurred on its pebbly banks, yet it seemed to have a partiality for the muddy patches on the trail. Rock Doves⁶ congregated on and about the dilapidated stone buildings; a Twite or Mountain Linnet⁷ put in an appearance, new to my acquaintance. As the day was far advanced, we pitched camp at the village of Anyangpa, 12,950 feet, glad to rest; where my companion retired to a house within the scattered village.

Preparation of specimens was continued next morning; meanwhile, Laosang, arrived at his home, had substituted

¹ *Parnassius orleans orleans* Oberth. *Parnassius epaphus pæta* Oberth. *Oeneis* ssp. near *buddha* Gr.-Grsh. *Satyrus autonæ celæno* Leech. *Satyrus sybillina* Oberth. *Asphantopus hyperantus* L.

² *Saxicola torquata stejnegeri* (Parrot). I do not consider any of these chats seen at high altitudes during the breeding season to be *przewalskii* (Pleske).

³ *Passer montanus obscuratus* Jacobi.

⁴ *Mergus merganser orientalis* Gould.

⁵ *Ibidorhyncha struthersii* Vig.

⁶ *Columba rupestris rupestris* Pall.

⁷ *Acanthis flavirostris miniakensis* Jacobi.

two powerful yaks for the hard-pushed cattle. Still imperceptibly sloping, the trail kept to the river, in view within a hundred yards. Numerous butterflies, chiefly Fritillaries, small Blues, and Skippers, could be caught with the least expected exertion. The chary Raven¹ was visible, and Carrion Crows² were as numerous as Jackdaws.³ At midday we reached a small edifice, outwardly in decay. The richly coloured frescoes inside were in better preservation; those depicting in realistic lewdness the origin of the male sex might well have been dispensed with, though never intended for 'the unbeliever'. To possess the literature and biblical pictures, the villagers showed an astounding eagerness for the printed sheets, which came as a revelation; but it must be remembered, there are few who cannot read, as one in every family has the right to priesthood in the Buddhism of Tibet. While the poorest male child in the land, if Fate ordains, may be chosen Dalai Lama or the Supreme Power in Lamaism. One aged searcher after knowledge presumed he could decipher the lettering in bold print, but he had to confess failing sight had defeated him. By the afternoon we had reached Yingkuanchai, after crossing the river by the picturesque, wooden bridge, where the channel was charmingly cramped by a stretch of low rocks. No mammals were secured, but Hodgson's Redstart⁴ was conspicuous, and the first, small batch of diminutive fish had been obtained. On our right, looking in the direction of our intended route, an ancient fortification crowned the bluff above, with its extensive wall, following the contour of the hill, in an excellent state of preservation. Truly, an impregnable position! Situated in a level valley, the hamlet, comprised of half a dozen houses, was at an altitude of 12,450 feet.

In a southern direction, through the open gap, the pyramidal mass of Minya Gonka, first seen from the Haja La, loomed out like a monolith, completely covered in glacier and

¹ *Corvus corax tibetanus* Hodgs.

² *Corvus corone orientalis* Eversm.

³ *Corvus dauuricus dauuricus* Pall.

⁴ *Phœnicurus hodgsoni* (Moore).

The following butterflies were obtained on July 15. *Aporia hippia* Brem. A single specimen obtained, met with nowhere else. *Melitæa sundara jezabel* Oberth. *Limenitis cottoni* Oberth. *Argynnis gong* Oberth. *Argynnis aglaja bessæ* Fruhst. *Lycæna pheretes* Hbnr. *Pyrgus (Hesperia) alpina* Ersch. ssp. n. Seven males obtained between here and Kwanchai. *Alpina* has not been recorded east of Kashmir or the Darwaz Mts. (ssp. *darwazica* Groum.).

perpetual snow, in dazzling purity—an inspiring impression, which time can never efface from the memory!

Below the meeting of the waters, a Nashi youth and I crossed the main river, when we ascended the hills, gathering plants, locating the Hare-bell Poppy for the first time; securing a few birds, inclusive of a Cuckoo,¹ a Crested Tit,² only sparingly distributed, and a Rosefinch³ that was obtained at the extreme, upper limits of the forest, at an elevation of 14,500 feet. A pair of magpies had a nest that must have represented an accumulation for many generations, measuring in depth some six to eight feet, on the forked boughs of the uppermost tree. Failing to get a view of the Minya Gonka range, owing to the hills ahead obstructing the prospect south, in looking north-eastward, as the sun was setting, I obtained a glimpse of the peaks of another majestic snow mountain, Jhara, about which more will be mentioned.

It was late, and darkness had set in by the time we gained camp, healthily fagged after this strenuous exercise, in addition to the day's march. The jingling of bells was equally as bad for my companion's equanimity as running water; though the muleteers removed these ornaments from their animals, it was with some reluctance. Neither had the boys recovered from their awkwardness; nevertheless they had done well hitherto, everything considered, beyond an occasional irritating lapse from rectitude, when it was a simple matter to discard a bird, spoilt in preparation, and deny it ever had existed, even when entered in my catalogue. And, well! as for plants, *hsien-sheng* could never keep a check on these, and, if so, could they not always be obtained, and easily replaced? An aversion to this, my latest venture, to proceed farther north was apparent, though they had everything to gain by putting forward their best effort; but, possibly they regretted having not returned with their comrades, after exhausting the diversions of Tachienlu. Still, my quest had to proceed, even though my retinue could not be expected to show the same keen interest as myself, in what was to them sometimes toil, if remunerative.

¹ *Cuculus canorus bakeri* Hart.

² *Parus dichrous dichroides* (Przew.).

³ *Erythrina pulcherrima argyrophrys* (Berlioz).

Once a load was adjusted, a peremptory kick in the stomach of either mule or yak, simultaneously with a tightening of the thongs with the hands, but more often with the teeth of the muleteers, frustrated any trick on the part of these animals to feign an abnormal, distended rotundity. Seldom were they given the benefit of the doubt. This stage was as level going as yesterday, and it gave us ample time to sweep the sluggish backwaters for small fish and frogs, when butterfly-nets served another purpose. Passing a small village, with the inhabitants out in force, a donation was given towards the new bridge, where lower down the river a few Terns¹ had been hovering. The trail now led into a blind alley, fringed on both sides with intervening walls and hedges that, in aspect and charm, partook of the north of England moorlands in similitude.

After regaining our correct bearings, a party of soldiers was encountered on the search for an absconder; we could give no information, having up to the present met no-one answering the description. Situated in a thorny bush, a magpie's nest, no more than six feet from the ground, pointed to a paucity of breeding-sites.

Taking temporary shelter from the drizzle, after copious sunshine, within a short distance from this last hamlet we had arrived at Tongolo, having risen only fifty feet. My tiny room on the house-top could not have been more comfortable; and, losing no time, while the other boys set traps and prepared specimens, Ming-sän and I proceeded along the Batang trail. Admittedly tired, he failed to do his part in circumventing a party of Eared-pheasants, whose display was plainly discernible from the trail, as the big white chickens, so designated nowadays by him, scuttled in and out of the brushwood on the hillside close to our left. Apart from two species of Laughing-thrush, widely distributed, though birds were much in evidence, this well-wooded portion of the valley, which narrowed here and was covered with prickly oak to our right, could not fail to centre interest on its indescribable beauty. Nimbus clouds, sinister in purplish black, loomed large, and we returned through a drenching rain-storm, having traversed five miles beyond the village.

¹ Possibly *Sterna hirundo tibetana* Saund.

The milk had been very welcome ; after disbursing the inconsiderable demand, our steps were retraced for a short distance beyond the stream where the low ground was much cut up by watercourses when, it was evident, we had not followed the caravan. However, the few patriarchal trees—warriors with a history—yielded the Rufous-bellied Woodpecker ;¹ where farther on, a handsome, big, green frog was obtained in the thick grass. Our direction now lay due north, but all of us were on the wrong side of the on-flowing river ; and, after a few of the ponies and the yaks had traversed a most uncomfortable trail that skirted the screes, it was found that the river was too deep to ford. The remaining animals were fortunately turned back in time when what was seemingly the best place to cross, decided on. Out of perverseness some got into deep water, my pony included, but, beyond a damping to kit, which little mattered, all eventually gained the bank, and my pony took the boys over in relay. Arrived at a single house, with a stone tower outside the enclosure, we rested midday at Pehsang.

A herd of yak, standing knee-high in the river, placidly whisking their enormous, tufted tails, looked the picture of contentment amidst a peaceful prospect : a choice subject for an artist's brush. A pair of White-rumped Swifts flew in and out of a crevice in the tower, where a number of Rock Doves had appropriated the inner ledges. The Striated Swallow,² with chestnut rump, was confined to a solitary pair. Several Marmots³ had been whistling on the crags of the right bank, though few had been seen. The sun became obscured when rain fell, and most of the muleteers and our servants retired to the house after stacking and covering equipment, which fortunately did not include my two large specimen-boxes ; to my intense relief, they had been left at Tachienlu. The mastiff, chained in the corner of the yard, resented our presence, when we trusted to the security of the heavy shackles. Ming-sän had good reason to know that such ferocious brutes, excessively savage through needless chaining, could at times break loose ; and had he not adroitly wielded a stick when at Cheto on one occasion I am afraid

¹ *Dryobates hyperythrus hyperythrus* (Vig.).

² *Hirundo daurica daurica* L.

³ *Marmota himalayana robusta* M.-Edw.

Ming-sän's calves would have grievously suffered, clad as he was in tight knee-breeches, and stockings,—yellow, moreover—, which would have been lamentable, as many a lady of the ballet might well have been proud to own such a pair herself ; while there would not have been the faintest chance of claiming compensation in a court of law. A woman's voice rang out from an upper niche of the house, recently left, as we removed the barriers ahead ; but, as this was our only exit, it was unavoidable.

Sparsely populated on our left, with much swampy ground intervening, after securing three Partridges,¹ one of which was too badly damaged for a skin-preparation, suitable for the cabinet, camp was pitched in the open on an extensive, level stretch, with low hills on each side, wooded in patches, deceptive in their apparent proximity. The loss of a few tent-pegs, light, and solid bamboo, not obtainable in this country, did not worry my retinue ; so, when no substitute was handy, two ropes tied to one peg was of no account. But now a blizzard was tearing along its course, lashing across our exposed site in all its fury. Outer and inner fly adhered in contact as one sodden sheet, while the rain poured in, never anticipating that the ropes and pegs would hold before the storm spent its fury. A rift in the clouds, and the sun shone forth belated, when our troubles were ended after my bedding had been shaken and dried, as it could best be accomplished.

Apparently the trail might be anywhere, and further, it did not much matter, provided a ford could be found ; but we had again kept too long on the right bank. After passing alongside other dwellings and skirting the steep banks on the edge of cultivation, we found a level stretch where the river was spanned by a trestle-bridge ; our caravan was located, still behind, having crossed lower down. Reaching a lone house, we rested. In view, a pair of Brahminy Duck was remarkably tame, accompanied by four birds of the year at the edge of a pool, when no time was lost in getting one of the brood for the pot. Wending its way down and following the course of the river, a Fish Eagle² passed south, in appearance almost completely brown, with the exception

¹ *Perdix hodgsoniæ sifanica* Przew.

² *Haliaeetus leucoryphus* (Pall.).

of a broad, white band across the tail. More small fish were netted in the clear, still runnels on spongy, mossy ground; numbers of stones had been upturned along the river-bank, disclosing many interesting beetles.

Once more we crossed to the right bank, where a few villagers, women as well as men, were engaged in hauling in logs where the valley was enclosed by high banks, and the river a fast-flowing torrent. We left the trail in an attempt to shoot Ibisbill¹ that had been apparent by their skimming, heavy, short flights, and piping call; but this attempt proved abortive. Flowers were in lavish profusion and in all the colours imaginable. The hillsides and gullies to the right were delightfully wooded. Arriving at the first house in Tschmengka, 12,725 feet, we had only risen about 175 feet; having pitched tents in the yard, unobstructed in view by a low wall, this situation seemed ideal. Leaving this secluded hamlet, divided by a lateral ravine, we were soon beyond the shade of the few ancient trees when the trail rapidly rose between boulder and scrub, on nearing the summit a small moraine lay in our path, when another frog, not plentiful at high altitudes, was obtained; where the torrent below pounded its course in a V-shaped ravine, thickly studded with conifers.

Rolling open country now appeared, and all eyes were fixed in the direction where Hlagong lamasery was supposed to lie, with a long gradual descent ahead of us. Meanwhile, we turned aside for a few hundred yards through the brush-wood up the gentle slope on our left; and, when the clouds had lifted, Jhara, rising like a sugarloaf, with serrated pinnacles, was disclosed in all its majesty of glacier and crevasse, in everlasting purity of ice and snow, glittering in the sunshine from immaculate white to the deepest azure blue: a sight astounding in its magnificence!

Capt. Gill, in a journey² undertaken in August 1877, was

¹ *Ibidorhyncha struthersii* Vig.

The following butterflies were obtained on July 18: *Aporia crataegi* L. *Satyrus palæarcticus iole* Leech. *Satyrus sybillina* Oberth. *Satyrus dryas astræa* Leech.

² River of Golden Sand, Gill (1880).

The following butterflies were obtained on July 19: *Erebia sedakovii* Ev. *Pararge dumetorum* Oberth. *Aphantopus hyperantus* L. *Cænonympha sinica* Oberth. *Limenitis cottoni* Oberth. *Melitæa sundara jezebel* Oberth. *Argynnis gong* Oberth. *Argynnis aglaia besa* Fruhst. *Lycæna pheretes* Hbnr. Common. *Lycæna eros helena* Gr.-Grsh. *Everes zuthus* Leech.

the first traveller to mention this mountain; although Kung-ka (Minya Gonka) is marked on his map, no mention is made of this latter and more commanding mountain. While no further information has been forthcoming respecting these mountains, since the expedition of Count Szechenyi in 1877-80, when the instrumental height of Jhara was recorded at 7,800 metres, and Kung-ka (Minya Gonka) at 7,600 metres. These altitudes were further detailed in Bretschneider's map of China to illustrate his *History of Botanical Discoveries in China* (1896), where Jhara is given as 25,592 feet, and Bokunka as 24,900 feet, but in a "second thoroughly revised edition" the former height is dropped and the latter has disappeared from the later maps, including the reprinted 1925 Kiatingfu sheet of the India 1/M map. And that is how the matter stands at the present day¹ (July 1930).

Hlagong, at 13,300 feet, comprised in the *gomba* only, was *en fête*, which partook of a festival, and in no time we were thronged with lamas and villagers as sightseers. The river was only a foot or so in depth where we had crossed. Here was to be noticed a small party of Brahminy Duck, fearless of the crowd within measurable distance, when at other times of the year in its winter quarters it would have been an impossible task to get within anything like such an approach; and, no doubt, the precept in regard to the sanctity of wild-life was rigidly observed, as the lamas have been known to gain the confidence of this sheldrake in providing food on its return in the spring. More power to the lamas, and may no introduction of modern firearms ever mar a consistency, which, laudable dogma, is full worthy of additional proselytes! Unknown to me, Ming-sän had taken out a gun, and he was hot on the chase. Meanwhile, my companion was besieged by a motley crowd, and even with adroit manœuvring could not shake off the urchins, until the scrolls were once again replaced, so rapaciously was the literature sought. A bang followed by another denoted something had happened; on the return of Ming-sän with a pair of fat ducks, some

¹ Vide *Journ. R. G. S.*, vol. Lxxv, No. 4, 1930. p. 349. Later information (October, 1933) as supplied by the same Journal culled from the *China Journal* mentions that the summit of Minya Gonka has been reached on October 28, 1932, which is later given in round figures at 24,900 feet; while Jhara is given as about 18,000 feet. This latter figure would place the summit of Jhara not more than one thousand feet above the perpetual snow-line!

random remarks by a sightseer, derogatory to a collector, fortunately subsided, which relieved a momentary tension. But personally I should have been better pleased had Ming-sän not acted so precipitately without permission, as we had only just arrived, and no time had elapsed to establish friendly relations. On the other hand, I had no wish to discourage keenness when it was often absent. Several Striated Swallows¹ flew hither and thither at no height from the ground, but they were quite safe in consequence. I never did consider it sound policy to camp alongside a lamasery; in this instance, the muleteers had wilfully disobeyed my order.

With a face wreathed in smile, the lusty Tibetan, who had accompanied Ming-sän from Tachienlu to Wushi and returned to Tachienlu with our caravan, was easily recognized. Intent on watching the ceremony within the court-yard of the *gomba*, all the boys delayed, and I had already crossed the river when the caravan appeared; the ponies, without masters, would, had I not yelled out to the muleteers, have gone into deep water, and, as it was, narrowly escaped wetting equipment, when specimens would have suffered irreparable damage. Having journeyed a few miles farther north, we decided to pitch camp to the right of the trail and about two hundred yards away on level ground, where there was every likelihood of securing many additional specimens.

Herds of yak numbering between six and seven hundred were grazing to the south. Work soon commenced in setting traps, and a number of marmots were obtained, thus, and with the aid of shot-gun and .22 rifle; though, on occasions, it meant opening out the burrow, as, so tenacious of life are these rodents, even an animal squarely hit will manage to wriggle into the wide orifice when, once inside, it will rapidly disappear into the farthest recess. One burrow that was revealed with the aid of inadequate tools, borrowed from the yak-herdsman in our vicinity, with those we could muster ourselves, measured twenty-four feet in length by three feet in depth at the end, moreover, in marl and gravel. Some mild excitement ensued when there would be a break-away from a

¹ *Hirundo daurica daurica* L. *Lycaena felicitis* Oberth. Several specimens of this lycænid butterfly were also obtained on July 19.

totally unexpected quarter. Couchant on the excavated soil, delighting in the sunshine when they would bask for an hour at a stretch, marmots were detected with difficulty; but, on a nearer approach, an erect posture denoted a wide-awake vigilance where before little evidence of acute faculties had been apparent.

In altitude this camp was 13,500 feet, which was occupied for three days. We were undoubtedly on the popular route between the Tibetan country, lying in a north-westward position relative to Tachienlu; on one day alone favourable to travel, between three thousand and four thousand, laden yaks, in numerous caravans, passed our camp, which episode drew from my companion, an Australian, familiar with 'a head of cattle', that such a sight had to be seen to be believed; while his estimate was nearer the higher figure than mine, owing to my attention being occupied with other matters.

Hence it was that others dependent on these caravans had their residential quarters near by, on the crags overlooking the stream, which accounted for the party of some fifty odd Griffon Vultures¹; at times, widely scattered over the plain, or concentrated on a yak before the last convulsions of departing life had left its huge, inanimate frame; when a few ravens had previously noted what was about to take place, and these, for a time, had to take a backseat. This Raven,² a dozen in number, frequented our camp along with several Kites, and it was less cautious than customary, but wary.

The muleteers had bargained for a couple of sheep; for one of which I paid a munificent sum, the equivalent of six shillings³ in English money, or less than one dollar and a half in U.S. currency at par. We were now 'in clover', as milk was also obtainable at no great distance away. My boys were also faring well in the marmot line: much flesh in hand, several were dried as pemmican for the future. The Griffon Vultures

¹ *Gyps himalayensis* Hume.

² *Corvus corax tibetanus* Hodgs.

³ Truly munificent in comparison with the following: "The low figure of 5s. apiece for sheep was reached in one or two south country fairs, but the lowest price I have seen was 2s. each for a couple of ewes at Horncastle (Lincolnshire) September fair. There were other prices almost as unfortunate." Percy W. D. Izzard, Agricultural correspondent *Daily Mail*, Sept. 19, 1933.

hung round, when they would bask with drooping wings on the slopes to the west ; one was shot with .22 rifle, when it took wing for about a quarter of a mile and dropped dead. My boys would have demolished it, also ; but, in deference to my advice that it preyed on corpses, their good intentions subsided. Measuring eight feet ten inches in spread of wing, and weighing $21\frac{3}{4}$ lb., it was a magnificent, adult specimen, and quite clean in body, as I failed to find a single parasite. In view of what my companion believed, and others have so rashly stated, too often loosely spoken of : as loathsome in appearance as in habits ; a description which is surely, grossly misleading, when once more the truth was vindicated ! And after all, is not the flight of the Griffon Vulture equally as impressive when sailing on expansive wing at stupendous heights as that of the Lämmergeyer ! A few, very few, Chats ¹ were sporadically distributed to the north, where a solitary pair of Swallows ² had a nest on a ledge of a rocky bluff, unpretentious in height. Rock Pigeons frequented the camp, and White-collared Blackbirds were evident to the south. Skylarks ³ were in song from early dawn ; and for two successive nights an owl hooted that must have been a large species, and probably it was the Eagle Owl.⁴ An adult Lämmergeyer, unlike the black-headed immature less frequently seen, occasionally flew over the camp within gun-shot range, when detail of colour in eye and feather could be plainly discerned. Small mammals were scarce ; of the larger, a Badger ⁵ was obtained.

In a series of S-loops the river, meandering through in its serpentine course the ground to the north, might appear to have deliberately planned its channel by choosing every means to delay its progress. ' Jhagha ' became more familiar, and she benefited by the various, discarded tit-bits from sheep or marmot, challenging any and every intruder of her own breed whenever a caravan passed, and sometimes received more than she bargained for, in snaps and bites. Riding like Dick Turpin on hardy, shaggy ponies, a little knot of Tibetans,

¹ *Saxicola torquata stejnegeri* (Parrot).

² *Hirundo rustica gutturalis* Scop.

³ *Alauda arvensis inopinata* Bianchi.

⁴ *Bubo bubo tibetanus* Bian. Obtained by Weigold in Szechwan.

⁵ *Meles meles leucurus* Hodgs.

sometimes nine, frequently half a dozen or less, with long-muzzle guns, perpendicular, and the fork tripod of the Tibetan Antelope's¹ horns, prominent, picturesque in all their several trappings—every one a potential robber—would appear in the far distance, soon to pull up at our camp, when greetings were interchanged with possibly a laconic but cheery interrogation: *ahgati*? (Are you languid?) And of what matter now when a geniality forbade the desire, if any did exist, to plunder.

Never once did a single visitor leave without his cherished scroll, when both Edgar and Laosang were kept busy distributing these valued documents—a mere exposition of biblical truths without comment. Frequently, a yak-load of deer antlers² was to be seen, distressing to the mind in terms of wholesale slaughter, making every allowance for those shed. Our slumbers would be disturbed more by 'Jhagha' than by the wolf that she was keeping at bay, or doing her best to warn off. Without a vestige of firewood, a situation that was always a bone of contention, as fuel is a very important adjunct to camp-life, Aziza searched near and far for yak-dung, at which occupation all helped in spare moments. And rarely was a better fire once Laosang manipulated his sheepskin bellows with the metal nozzle; but this gadget was of the conjurer's art, and entirely dependent on the knack of dexterous action.

Out of the question to transport (farther away) the bulky skins, recently obtained, dried to the best advantage when hampered by bluebottles; with what waterproof sheets still remained, and one of my linen sheets, which might be spared from my bedding, as something of a requisite texture and size would only answer the purpose, Laoyang left for Tachienlu with a light but bulky load, when he was instructed to bring in return further cotton-wool—as much as he could lay hands

¹ *Pantholops hodgsoni* Abel.

² These antlers belonged to the Szechwan Red Deer, a true *Cervus* of the Elaphine group, *Cervus macneilli* Lyd. "Horns with brow, bez and tres or royal tines, and usually in adults with each horn with five points, sometimes with more. The tines, with rare exceptions, are undivided. The bez or second tine, as a rule, considerably exceeds the brow or first tine in length" (Blanford). The tumid and naked portion of the upper lip and nose or muffle in this deer is short in contradistinction to the Rusine group with no bez tine and a large muffle.

on—and also some necessary articles of food to Tailing, where I intended to return. As no-one else could be spared or was willing to go, and a case of imperative need, it was hoped that by taking the direct route he would save one if not two days.

Less of the untrodden heights of Jhara were visible from our camp, with this advantage that each view-point showed the mountain from a different angle. The country, typical of marmot ground, differed little from what it was like to the south in its rounded hills, through which the trail gently undulated along an open, level valley, well watered, when a stream had to be crossed at intervals; and, at one place in particular, my pony plunged up to the girths in a hole where a few paces aside shallow water was seemingly evident, though churned into liquid mud by numerous caravans.

An extensive swamp lay on our right, where about half a dozen pairs of Redshank¹ were at their breeding grounds; and, on being disturbed, they rose to utter an alarm, *teuk*, when a wild medley in call penetrated the air from remote corners, emanating from others, as each pair was flushed. The Horned Lark² and a Skylark,³ with Hodgson's Pied Wagtail, and again, the Yellow-headed Wagtail,⁴ represented a number of interesting birds; but a large grey Heron,⁵ solitary, leisurely wending its way to the east, baffled me, as no herons had been met with previously, and, indeed, they were not encountered until much later, and at comparatively low altitudes only. A mob of Tibetans rushed down from their camp to see what was the object of our shooting; when Ming-sän returned, after chasing the heron from one point to another without getting within range. Not less than two thousand yaks were grazing on the plain; and, as far as could be counted, comprised in two sections, there were at least fifty tents.

Nearing our midday halt I mounted my pony before crossing the river, which entered the plain from the north-west; and, before it was realized, I had reached ground over which the tethering ropes stretched across my path at close intervals. Fearing an entanglement with a restive pony

¹ *Totanus totanus eurhinus* Oberth.

² *Eremophila alpestris khamensis* (Bianchi).

³ *Alauda arvensis inopinata* Bianchi.

⁴ *Budytes citreola calcarata* (Hodgs.).

⁵ Possibly *Ardea cinerea jouyi* Clark.

I turned to the left between the outer row of tents, when a pandemonium was let loose by the barking of dogs. While two smaller dogs, already at large, even if less powerful than those on the leash, were engaged in a determined effort to hamstring my pony, in difficulties as he was on swampy ground. It was a matter of getting past with the least possible delay, as, although half of these ferocious brutes had been left in the rear, there yet remained some twenty more, garlanded, with red, woollen scarves, fuming ahead. Realizing the gravity of the situation, each master ran to his own dog to shorten the liberal length of leash, with much glee at my predicament, which however would have been no joke for me had any more got loose, when I have little doubt they would have torn me to pieces like a pack of ravenous wolves.

No more expeditious method of causing the discomfiture of a mounted raiding party, advancing on the object of their onslaught under the cover of darkness, than that of letting loose a pack of these mongrel mastiffs at the right moment, of a breed and temper to those I escaped, could be imagined; that had happened to Edgar's knowledge. Neither could I defend myself, having no pistol; and, if I could have, had any been shot in self-defence, as I should certainly have had to do, had any broken loose, the row that would have resulted might not have ended in the shooting of dogs. In this incident I must have had a fortunate escape. There is, in my opinion, much more danger in the so-called less-dramatic, minor incidents—a bout of dysentery, for instance—than in the dazzling episodes when travelling through wild country out of touch with the advantages of civilization.

Identified as the Merlin,¹ this diminutive falcon was seen in flight towards the river. Lunch, over, we were treated to an exhibition of stone throwing with the sling, as an athletic 'David' saved himself much foot-work over the hillside when a rodeo or round-up of the yaks of an outgoing caravan took place, as they were alternately yelled at and struck, when the occasion demanded, by a stone of no small size and no light force of impact. Altogether a marvellous display of dexterous skill!

With alpine flowers in profusion, we left the main caravan route, rising over the col, 13,700 feet, where an

¹ Possibly *Falco columbarius insignis* (Clark).

ill-defined trail followed the crest of the hill on our left. Immediately, a sharp descent commenced, through wooded country with birch predominant; while the formation of the surrounding hills and deep ravines took on a totally different aspect, with every indication of past disturbances from subterranean forces in the distorted configuration of the land in view. Strawberries—better than none at all—of a size, out of the ordinary for the wild fruit, grew close to hand at which we lingered; once the head-waters of a stream were reached, so choked was it with minute fish, we had a busy time netting all that could be caught without undue delay. Meantime, I had lost touch with the caravan that was left in my companion's charge. Rock-pigeons and White-rumped Swifts had their nests in the inaccessible crags above on our right; but no partridges were flushed in the barley-fields, as it might have been expected. With the exception of one house, all the rest were empty shells; the head occupant appeared, and he seemed to take an interest in such unusual visitors to this remote valley, in his sole possession; I have no doubt Ming-sän, if not my Nashis who rarely chose to advertise their alien speech, satisfied his harmless interrogations: who were we and where were we going.

Pockets, containing a slate of excellent texture and quality, suitable for sharpening scalpels, were within reach, when a few pieces of slate were put aside. Arriving at Pamei, 12,300 feet, situated within an open undulating lie of land, enclosed by the offshoots of several ranges, the direct trail to Cheto came in on our right, when there was some hesitation on our part, should the caravan have continued along this main trail. We had already proceeded beyond the village of lower Pamei, which was barely discernible, while the lamasery was in full view, perched on a rocky eminence, a dominating site; when, as I looked back, the prospect disclosed to me the good reason for this choice on the part of the lamas. Jhara, regal in dignity of isolation, once again in all its glory, without even so much as a wisp of cloud to shield its culminating spike from inquisitive sight; rarely must its secrets of enrapturing beauty be ever thus revealed as on this occasion. The muleteers having chosen a walled-in hollow, contrary to my companion's instructions, accounted for our dilemma, when nothing could

have been visible of the caravan. This perverseness necessitated further handling of equipment, which might have been undertaken in the first instance; as what light now remained could better avail us in pondering over the deathly pallor of immaculate purity, from which the lingering rays faded with an evanescent sunset, while seated on the knoll above, when a star studded firmament ensued with nightfall.

We were visited by villagers next morning with little to sell but coarse vegetables; who had arrived from the flat-roofed houses where, above the gables, in honour of that shaggy beast of burden, supplying both meat and milk, clothing and fuel, was inlaid in granite or white quartz a pair of curved horns as a representation—an emblem of its utility.

We descended the knoll, continuing up the valley to the east, still going north. Amidst the stone remains of a ruined house, a snake was seized when one of the Nashi boys, not yet expert in this department, executed a whoop and dance when he might have been more usefully employed, as there was every chance of my losing an unusual find. For some reason or other the caravan had lagged behind; and, as time advanced, we feared that some of the animals must have been held to ransom or impounded for wandering into cultivation, or somehow there had been complications of which we had no knowledge. Meeting a genial Chinese traveller who undertook to institute inquiries on his reaching Pamei, meanwhile, we were busy with the plants, where asters, in yellow disk and mauve petals, on a *casual* glance, appeared to clash in colour; interspersed with two orchises, one, a slender pink Lady's Tresses (*Spiranthes*), with the tiny flowers on the spike in a spiral setting; and numbers of flies and butterflies settled on the wealth of blooms. A solitary Green Sandpiper¹ frequented a pool just off the trail. Midday it was, before the caravan put in an appearance, and we had only reached the next hamlet where the Sparrow² was again in possession; and, besides the Common Bunting,³ widely spread, a pair of breeding Chats⁴ were interesting.

¹ *Tringa ochropus* L. ² *Passer montanus obscuratus* Jacobi.

³ *Emberiza godlewskii omissa* Roths.

⁴ *Saxicola torquata stejnegeri* (Parrot).

The following butterflies were obtained on July 24: *Colias montium* Oberth. *Melanargia leda* Leech. Obtained for the first occasion, and met

On our left, to a great extent, the hills were comprised of slate that lent additional colour to the landscape in its varied hues of green, brick-red, and purple. A further hamlet of a few houses was passed through when we entered an open defile; crossing the stream, where marmots were again observed to our left, on rounding a bluff, the expansive plain upon which stands the large lamasery and village of Tailing appeared in the distance. There was no sign of water in any of the dried-up watercourses over which we traversed, as we had left the trail, if trail there was; rather than camp in the village or near the main stream I preferred to camp near the hillside, if it could be managed. I might be wrong, but there must be a spring somewhere in the distance to the left of the *gomba*, and on seeing a woman carrying what appeared to be a ewer decided us to continue, when, on reaching the ground within two hundred yards of the house, we were that much nearer an essential in this respect than the occupants themselves. My companion had almost stepped upon a lark's nest when camp was pitched shortly afterwards. A large, dark coloured eagle, seen to rise on entering the plain, was an immature Fish Eagle.

The afternoon was scorching hot, but a cold, westerly wind set in; and after the gust had subsided, the hills to the north were white with hail, which did not lie but rapidly dissolved. In altitude we were at 12,600 feet, and the following day we remained. As soon as the sun was visible, a repetition of yesterday, it was to be noticed that the bed of the stream, bone dry at other times, trickled through our camp as the result of intense evaporation. This led to the interminable topic: whether or no the early rise in the Yangtse was caused by the melting of the Tibetan snows, to the extent that it is generally believed. I frankly confessed that my conclusions coincided with my companion's, because the rise, resulting from this factor, must be infinitesimal when evaporation plays so active a part, and snow seldom lies for long periods on the Tibetan plateaux.

with later around Tailing. Fifteen specimens collected. *Satyryus sybillina* Oberth. *Satyryus dryas astræa* Leech. *Argynnis pales palina* Fruhst. *Argynnis aglaia bessa* Fruhst. Common. *Argynnis gemmata* Btlr. *Argynnis clara manis* Fruhst. *Argynnis adippe nivæa* Oberth. Evidently the high altitudinal form, only obtained at this locality. *Cænonympha semenovi* Alph. *Zephyrus bieti* Oberth.

The presence of a few kites decided me to survey the ground behind ; when the remains of a mole were picked up, and evidence of its presence in numerous runs. Although we spent a laborious time opening out several the complete length, it was to no purpose, and presumably the colony had died out, and therefore useless to set any further traps. The number of marmots increased, however, with fish and miscellaneous insects. Edgar's literature had been again in great demand but more was expected by Laoyang. Catering for the bodily welfare of the lamas, I distributed in small quantities maize and assorted seed, which was in excess of requirement for trapping, when it was just as eagerly sought.

Jackdaws, at least to the number of four hundred, both adults and youngsters, pied and entirely black, were on the move over the plain, when vociferous gapes demanded attention, and a considerable reduction must have taken place in the crane-flies. A pair of magpies, with young well on the wing, were also on the outer edge, when it was not a difficult matter to detect the parent birds by a more robust bill. Hoopoes, a few, were also conspicuous ; and a family party of four kestrels, all of which appeared to be the dark breeding-race, unexpected at this elevation.

My companion went on ahead to the village, crossing by the rickety bridge ; the caravan and I moved off later, passing the lengthy east and north walls of the lamasery, not without Laosang's yaks following their master into a yard when information was required of the route, as apparently none of the muleteers knew of a trail on the right bank of the stream. Eventually the stream had reluctantly to be crossed, and at this stretch was flowing between high banks ; when, after ploughing our way through cultivation, taking the edge wherever possible, as I feared there might be retaliation, we once more got clear. The one and only trail was reached when Laosang was sent back to find his master who, however, as it proved, had preceded us, on the look-out for the snows to the south, a panorama in which both of us were amply rewarded when to the left of the Minya Gonka massif, an enormous ice-field was within our field of vision. The trail now rose and dipped, when we halted at noon, having seen a small lamasery isolated in a valley to our left, where

a stray dog as seen in the distance appeared to resemble a wolf. Ming-sän waited behind to try his luck with a marmot that had bobbed in and out of its burrow, when 'Jhagha' had taken more interest in it than we wished.

Questioned in respect to ponies which had strayed, we could not help except by promising to keep a look-out and notify others. Descending a deep rift we found ourselves in a narrow valley when three adult lämmergeyers flew past, so near that the swish of their wings was audible to us on the march. Leaving this valley we again ascended when, from the hillside a few hundred feet up, and beyond the narrow neck through which we had come, Jhara came into view. I had hoped that Minya Gonka would have been visible for a comparison; but, beyond an extensive view, the summit of this snowy 'monolith' was obscured by cloud. Passing a Tibetan caravan, halted, we were not enamoured by appearances, which however often lead to false deductions. I was struck by the totally unexpected beauty of this long valley into which we had dropped where, after crossing the stream, the trail gradually ascended through vegetation which grew as it surely never would at a similar altitude, if exposed to the warring elements. Today the warmth was almost tropical, without any enervating sense of inertia, with a delicious briskness in the air. More flowers and further novelties! Cultivation of bearded wheat, limited in extent within the hollows, had been passed through on the way, up to an altitude of 13,000 feet, at which extreme limit it ceased.

We were beyond all trace of dwellings, and, indeed, no house had been passed since leaving Tailing; a few were to be seen to the south in this charming valley, which we had now entered: there was nothing for it, but stay I must. Owing to dawdling on the way, my tent could not be erected until both poles arrived; and, as they did not allow of reduction in length, muleteers had never shown a willingness to carry these light but cumbersome necessaries. Others had been busy scouring the rising ground on our left or to the west. I had worked above the stream; but, apart from the entrancing beauty of the bits of woodland, intersected with meadows and crowded with flowers, birds had

Several specimens of the butterfly, *Satyrus sybillina* Oberth., were obtained on July 26.

been few, and only a badger's lair had been located. Next morning Ming-sän again failed when, letting the caravan proceed, one boy and I worked over the boulder-studded ground in the direction of the forest to the west : a stretch of forest that continued along this valley with hardly a break for about twenty miles, with a depth of about a mile or a mile and a half, extending up to the summits of the hills. Crossing moraine after moraine, intersected with strips of woodland, interspersed with briars abundant in bloom, blood-pheasants had been located, while a brood of hazel-hen, with the youngsters almost fully grown, were disturbed ; on dispersal, the most of them to take refuge on branches obscured by the foliage. Huge-leafed rheums lined the spongy banks of a stream. On reaching the upper limits of the forest, a wild-cat¹ flashed past within a few feet of the boy, unobserved by him in my line of fire.

As we had wandered far afield and had gained sufficient knowledge of what I considered this locality held, we returned to the trail, our caravan having long since departed. But this was no place to forsake after so short a halt ! Gradually ascending and traversing a stretch of moraine, avoided wherever possible by every caravan, judging by the deviations to right and left, which however availed little, eventually the main stream was crossed ; when after a sharp rise, Kwanchai, solely comprised in a single, demolished two-storeyed house, came into view.

Having accomplished a good morning's work, we decided to pitch camp, where we stayed also on the following day. If there had been a settled community anywhere in the neighbourhood in former times, there was not a soul now. Kwanchai (Baron's Hall), gradually subsiding into decay, still imposing in its present, ruined state, commanded a wide outlook down the valley ; while the prospect from the roof, looking north, must have embraced much of the pass. The choice of such a site by the ruler of this principality must have been with a view

¹ Impossible to identify when so little is known about the cats of Tibet and China. Three races of the Golden Cat have been described, all three of which may occur in Szechwan, whence the first two have been recorded : *Felis* (Profelis) *temmincki mitchelli* Lyd., *F. t. tristis* A. M.-Edw., and *F. t. diminicanorum* Sclater (S. E. Tibet), apart from the Marbled Cat, and Leopard Cat. Countless thousands must have found their way to the furriers in the past, and ' the trade ' is nowadays well supplied.

to outlook and isolation. Its history is wrapped in intrigue and crime; after the loss of his comely wife to an admirer, this potentate, goaded into retaliation, took revenge on others, when he in turn was murdered, undertaking a journey; thus ended a blighted life. With the exception of the kingdom of Muli, the Chinese Central Government have, by direct or indirect means, abolished all these small kingdoms along the eastern frontier of Tibet, which comprised some eighteen to twenty-four in number.

Scouring the surroundings in all directions, I explored the lateral valley to the east, blocked at its head by abruptly rising mountains of no great height, yet impressive in their ruggedness. Facing north, almost invariably so, in these lateral valleys when wooded, the conifers grew on the banks and slopes of the hills with this aspect; the only reason for this remarkable trait, at all feasible, must lie in the general trend of the rainfall to sweep down from the north. The stream came on in spate, and we were shortly within a local rainstorm, after having crossed and recrossed into the forest. Hodgson's Flycatcher,¹ with a few Tree Warblers,² delighted in this secluded retreat; and the Eared Pheasant barked above, when some were seen to rise into the dark, leafy tops of the pines, as though they wanted to take refuge from some predatory foe, as they were unusually noisy. Returning, a few hares were seen but they vanished on a nearer approach.

Muleteers and boys occupied the courtyard, sheltered by the high wall, and all enjoyed the light and warmth from a roaring fire, with no stint of dry timber when so many beams and planks lay to hand. Approaching under the shadow of darkness, a weary and famished youth cautiously drew near, having arrived from the direction of the pass, or perhaps, on seeing our fire he had come out of hiding in search of food and warmth. Questioned as to his occupation and movements, little, satisfactory, would he divulge, and he remained an object of suspicion to our caravan until it occurred to us that he might be the absconder for whom the search-party, met twelve days ago, was out; though, instead of continuing west as they anticipated, he had gone north like ourselves.

¹ *Muscicapula hodgsonii* (Verr.).

² *Phylloscopus pulcher vegetus* (Bangs).

Phylloscopus trochiloides Sundelev.

Taxed with this accusation, it was not denied. Having partaken of food and received a help in coin, he cleared out in the early morning; if wise, he would keep well away from his pursuers now that he had had his rifle stolen, as on the contrary it possibly meant forfeiting his life. A simple sort of chap, we often wondered how he fared, wandering about like a hunted beast: who can say whether or no he had ample justification. In any event, without knowledge of the facts of his case, we were not in a position to judge.

Chats, but few in number, with larks and buntings, more obtrusive, occurred on the sloping waste that stretched towards the pass where a trail diverged to the east. Much of the ground in the vicinity of the river was hereabouts a morass through which tortuous channels of sparkling water wound in and out in a sinuous course. Once again a breeding ground of the Eastern Redshank had been located; where another interesting wader, the Wood Sandpiper¹ was secured.

My shooting must have almost scared the wits of four lamas, who were now visible, hastening to goad on their ponies and increase the intervening space; who the weird-looking creature to them was, if ever they ventured a glance, will ever be a mystery, and it might well remain so, provided no harm befell them. Although no trail was observed converging from the west, it was evident one existed, if little used. Exercising care, the stronger boy took me across on his back at the shallowest part of the stream that could be forded; and, after shooting a Carrion Crow² when nearing brushwood, a Pica³ was secured as it dived into cover. A pair of buzzards afforded a pleasing diversion beyond all danger from us. After wandering through the forest, continuing south, we broke through boulder-strewn ground, lavish with flowers, where a Gentian,⁴ tall and of exquisite blue, flourished in the crevices, previously obtained at Wushi. About here remains of *manidrombo*, inscribed in multitudinous hieroglyphics, denoted the former existence of a settled population;

¹ *Rhyacophilus glareola* (Gm.).

² *Corvus corone orientalis* Eversm.

³ *Ochotona cansa stevensi* Osgood.

⁴ *Gentiana veitchiorum*.

but it was quite by chance we discovered them, so overgrown was this burial ground.

During the afternoon, when brief spells of sunshine would allow, we netted a number of butterflies,¹ including some choice Fritillaries² and delicate Blues.³ My companion assured me the country partook of similar features as far as Dawo; though much might have been accomplished beyond, even to Kanze—the scene of a disastrous earthquake in recent times (March 1923)—this route had been worked over by the Stötzner Expedition with Dr H. Weigold as ornithologist.

Now that a fair selection of mammals and birds had been obtained we struck camp, moving south to a locality below our last camp, when our caravan laboured up the mountain-side as near to the forest for a suitable camping-site to be located. (Much time is lost, especially in the morning when it is essential to be early out, through bad judgment in deciding on a wrong position; if the muleteers considered my request erratic, it was not unreasonable in these circumstances.)

That same evening, accompanied by the youngest boy, the forest was entered, offering plenty of scope, and with which I was now tolerably familiar. Having passed through and arrived at a portion of ground, interspersed with scrub at 14,500 feet, my attention was drawn to Eared-pheasants in a small party well above, with a cock in relief on a prominent position, surrounded by the rest, similar in colour, white body with purple and green tail, appearing in the distance like a graceful breed of the domestic White Leghorn. Although my gaze was centred on these pheasants, as invariably done, the surroundings were scanned lest there should be any clue to their disquietude, as at this distance no danger could be expected from my quarter, even though my presence had been disclosed; when, instantaneously to my left I caught sight of a head, emerging at no great distance from a point above in the brushwood

¹ *Melitæa sundara jezabel* Oberth. *Erebia sedakovii* Ev. *Satyrus palæarcticus iole* Leech. *Satyrus dryas astræa* Leech. *Pararge dumetorum* Oberth. *Aphantropus hyperantus* L. *Cænonympha semenovi* Alph. *Cænonympha sinica* Oberth.

² *Argynnis pales palina* Fruhs. *Argynnis gemmata* Btlr. *Argynnis clara manis* Fruhs. Fifty-five specimens.

³ *Lycæna pheretes* Hbst. *Lycæna eros helena* Gr.-Grsh.

whence we had come, which, on a first impression, resembled a lioness.¹ (There is no accounting for such an absurd identification, if it were not for the suddenness of the encounter, and as such, momentarily, it seemed.) Out lumbered a huge *brown* bear. Fraught with tension, the scene dramatically developed when closely followed number two, with yet another in young bruin. In single file, leisurely they strode across our line of sight within a distance of less than one hundred yards, when they deviated and advanced up the hillside; the leading bear, presumably the male, turned about and for a brief interval languidly surveyed the prospect to the east. And should the Tibetan encampment at the bottom of the valley have been beyond what his sight allowed, it is almost certain he could scarcely have missed seeing me, as by this time I was off my knees, rather than miss a single moment of this dramatic and startling episode. Dun or drab brown in colour, unrelieved, except for a vertical line of paler hue in front of the shoulder, more defined in their progeny to constitute a cream coloured band, this bear was none other than the dreaded *Dred-mo*, of the Tibetans, or the *Ma-hsiung* (horse-bear) of the Chinese, and the *Ursus lagomyiarius*² of Przewalski. Tibetans informed me this bear digs out the marmot in times of stress, and there can be little doubt that the pica or mouse-hare is likewise dealt with, so that the scientific name is appropriately descriptive. As Przewalski's specimen came from considerably farther north,

¹ Vide *ut infra*, Tibetan Lion.

² Pocock in a comprehensive and instructive treatise on *The Black and Brown Bears of Europe and Asia*. *Journ. Bombay Nat. Hist. Socy.*, Vol. xxxv, No. 4, p. 807, relegates this name to the synonyms of *Ursus arctos pruinosus* Blyth (*The Blue Bear of Tibet*.) I have also to thank Mr Pocock for kindly confirming this decision by letter. Nevertheless, until the type specimen has been examined—*lagomyiarius* Przewalski, 1883, non Severtzow, 1887, admitting the possibility of these two bears being one and the same; under the circumstances, the only course open is to await further research, as the *brown* bears that came under my observation, though the colour of the body is of little importance, had a great extent of collar marking on *the sides and nape of the neck* that was too prominent to be missed; the colour of the legs could have only been seen on a closer inspection, and then possibly not satisfactorily. In this respect agreeing, from the description, with *Ursus arctos collaris* Cuv. & Geoffr. (*The Siberian Brown Bear*).

Described in Przewalski's *Third Journey to Tibet*, 1879-1880, issued in 1883 (p. 216, figured). Apparently there is no English translation of this work. Report has it that there are additional specimens in the same Museum (1933)

it does not necessarily follow that my recorded observation has reference to the typical bear. Apparently the type specimen is in the Leningrad Museum. Dr H. Weigold received a live, juvenile specimen from the Chinese magistrate at Batang, which he safely transported to Peking and Tientsin, whose whereabouts have since been lost. The existence of huge brown bears, approximating in size to a small Grizzly, and also a Wapiti in East Asia, as in a number of trees and plants, shows a zoological and botanical affinity with North America. I have been unable to trace any record of this huge *brown* bear's having been seen previously by others.¹ Gile's *Chinese Dictionary* mentions a Swan or Suan, the Tibetan lion, partly mythical, but it must undoubtedly refer to the *dred-mo*, present Tibetan usage, feminine; *dred-bo*, masculine. "Dred, Sanscrit for hyena, which name has probably been transferred by the inhabitants to the dred or yellow bear." Judging by the fact that it is associated in the classics with man and cattle, this indicates that it is believed to devour both men and cattle. The first reference is an extract from Jeschke *Tibetan Dictionary*: "The heads are suspended in front of shrines": hence my reference to the skulls at Wushi. (*Journal of Science and Arts*, Shanghai. Sowerby 1923-4.)

Returning to camp, Edgar greeted me with: "What luck?" In reply came: "Nothing in particular, except," followed by a pause, "that I have seen the *Dred-mo*, and three at that!" Then the episode in detail was told to my companion; and, even though not substantiated by the slain trophies, no 'hardened sceptic' can rob me of my own gratification at having been privileged to feast my eyes on these ponderous brutes for five brief minutes; from the appearance of the first muzzle until, on nearing the ravine, the youngster gained a position between its parents when, with the disappearance of the hind-quarters of all three simultaneously, I was left

¹ Pocock identifies the two specimens in the British Museum obtained by Captain G. Fenwick Owen from the Minshan Mts. some 250 miles north-north-east of this locality and a skin obtained by Captain Neill Malcolm (? Malcolm McNeill.), September 22, 1896, from the foot of Namoran Duran Pass between North East Tibet and Tsaidam as *U. a. pruinus*. And in conclusion states: "The race seems nearly allied to the so-called 'black-bears' (*lasiotis* and *yesoensis*) of Manchuria and Japan, apart from the white collar. . . . The claws of *pruinus* are, however, typically pale horn-coloured instead of black."

to digest on reflection what a remarkable incident had been my lot !

With cold rain, the following morning was cheerless in its immediate prospect, while nothing could be done unless weapons of a heavier calibre were forthcoming ; and, for these, ample reward was offered ; but the muleteers failed, after visiting the encampment below, to negotiate a loan, and apparently there were no suitable weapons, available. However, all seemed desirous of partaking in a beat and showed a remarkable faith in my armament ; it was not for me to fail. Rifts in the clouds showed up many a hollow, golden with flowers, high up on the opposing mountains, lit by gleams of sunshine, when towards evening the weather showed improvement. Mustering all hands and every gun in my possession, having nicked the largest shot cartridges for my 20 bore, a totally inadequate armament, nevertheless, if not suicidal to make the attempt so lightly armed, we advanced straight up the rugged slope to reach the upper limits of the forest. Resting awhile to take stock of the situation and gain our breath, I detected the presence of Eared-pheasants when Ming-sän promptly went inside the forest. Eagerly awaiting events, the movement of vegetation denoted something beyond the power of pheasants to accomplish ; in a few moments, Ming-sän—but a very different Ming-sän than he who had entered—emerged, paler in hue, with *dred-mo* on his lips ; with very good reason for his anxiety at this sudden encounter. A further opportunity was not to be missed. Hurriedly forming in line, gradually and carefully we beat the forest, but without the sign of bear, big or little ; having passed through, we awaited from an advantageous stance on the off chance that they had not yet left the forest. Rain descended in a deluge, and the only course left to us was to beat along a lower alignment on our way back ; but, apart from coming across a hazel-hen with her brood of chicks, when one was secured, as we failed to catch others, some escaping into the deep crevices, the last of the *Dred-mo* had been seen. Good luck to them !

The presence of Kites, circling daily above the forest denoted an acuteness of vision for ground-game with young. No sooner had we struck camp next morning than a few

Carrion Crows, the first arrivals, appeared, followed by a solitary Griffon Vulture, ludicrously making its way up the brow of the hill in ungainly hops. Drying of clothes by the camp-fire under recent, adverse conditions had not been much of a success, but, apart from a pair of burnt boots, little else was amiss; while there was no information of Laoyang, who ought to have followed on, had he reached Tailing and found us gone. Certainly, he might have missed us, camped as we were above the trail and not within sight from any spot where he would traverse. Possibly there was an almost equal chance of our meeting, should the present route decided on leave Tailing to the east, and to that place we intended returning. Continuing due south, the river was not crossed until shortly before midday, when it was forded; and, resting with an immense yak caravan in our vicinity, numbers of magpies were conspicuous. But, with the exception of a snake, caught amongst the ruins of a house, and a few pairs of Ibisbill¹ seen, little else had been noteworthy.

One or two occupied habitations were passed later, and a gutted and burnt-out lamasery lay in our track; while a small scattered settlement denoted a village on the right bank of the river where, also, stood a small lamasery. My companion informed me that his previous visit had not been pleasant, and we decided to continue. We diverged through cultivation where the few houses were abandoned; and, turning sharply to the left, a shallow stream was crossed, when we found ourselves at the last, demolished house in this sequestered retreat. While the main valley, just vacated, was at this quarter moderately well wooded, still confined to its western flanks, chiefly in the pockets of ravines, with a north aspect; although more extensive woodland lay ahead to the south.²

There was not a particle of dry fuel, either wood or yak-dung, in our immediate vicinity; no trees, except the solitary patriarch, abutting on the remains of the rough-hewn, thick, stone walls where, within rank nettles grew four to five feet in height. Indenting on the accumulated pile of twigs and branches, which must have served as a magpie's nesting quarters for many years, Aziza collected sufficient fuel for

¹ *Ibidorhyncha struthersii* Vig.

² Vide reference to Zambaku, p. 114, line 11.

his requirement, to which my companion had supplemented, but, owing to a misunderstanding, one of the muleteers laid a first claim. However in the end there was sufficient at a pinch for all. Shortage of food began to make itself felt again, when I managed to shoot a Rock Pigeon¹ that, hurriedly cooked, resisted demolition in its toughness. Marmots, erect with pendant fore paws, surveyed us from a safe distance, appearing like puppets very much alive. Improvising a foundation of *obo* slabs, my companion slept upon 'the precepts of the prophets', but unfortunately our rest was disturbed in an early hour by one of Laosang's yaks, when, getting entangled in the ropes, it brought the tent down on top of us. Preparing to strike camp, a pair of ravens took an interest in our departure, croaking and looking askance, anxiously awaiting their opportunity. Villagers straggled through on their way to the crops when Aziza managed to purchase a fowl. With a short day's march ahead, more time could be spent collecting the flowers and butterflies, which were in great variety and abundance. A yak caravan had recently passed, and we struck up a narrow, insignificant defile, frequented by a few redstarts; when my pony, without rider, infected with restiveness at the sight of a traveller who had passed us, and who was urging on his mount, bolted, and, by the time we had reached the summit he was well across the plain of Tailing. Giving time for one of the boys to catch up with him, with true gentility he waited, when my pony was eventually led into camp at our former site.

Inquiries failed to elicit any information of Laoyang. On the following morning a figure, first seen from afar, merged into tangible recognition, and the eagerly expected youth in time arrived. Apart from an insect-killing bottle to replace the last one, broken, of which articles my boys had now left me with the barest essentials, neither food, cotton-wool, nor Edgar's further instalment of literature had been brought; apparently the caravan, which had these articles, he had lost touch with, contrary to all precedent. Neither was it possible to give credence to his statement that he had fallen in with marauders; but, as he persisted that the caravan had gone on to Dawo, there was nothing else to be done but for

¹ *Columba rupestris rupestris* Pall.

him to follow on in its track, and later return to Tachienlu. A letter was given him to deliver to Père Doublet, the R.C. priest, explaining our predicament; local inquiries were instituted in case this caravan had actually gone through Tailing, as we had failed to meet with it on the only other route it could possibly have traversed, though we might have missed it when in camp below Kwanchai.

While Laoyang might be given the benefit of the doubt, somehow his story lacked authenticity. My companion, fluently conversant with the Chinese and the Tibetan language, failed to unravel its ramifications, and the rest of the boys appeared baffled and reticent; unless it was they chose the role of passive onlookers, loth to censure for a scrape. As time elapsed, the mystery was solved, but too late for any of the articles to be of any service or recoverable. Unfortunately for Laoyang, he had on a previous occasion experienced ill-treatment by bandits, having been so tightly bound by the hands that, when he came to me, he had almost lost all power to grasp, though by degrees, regaining strength. On this occasion he had found the attractions of the bazaar at Tachienlu too alluring after the wilds, with disastrous results to ourselves; thus, this latest canard fizzled out. If not a sadder and wiser youth, he did his best afterwards to make amends for this lapse from integrity.

By this time 'Jhagha' had accustomed herself to our table, to receive many a biscuit or residue of soup and porridge, when excess food was at a discount; and, in consequence, only retired to her master, if nothing more was forthcoming. Slings stones, the Tibetans of an outgoing caravan rounded up their yaks, some three hundred in number. Having tethered the yaks in lines, loads were adjusted. In a surprising time they were once more under way, while women and children hurriedly scooped up the valuable deposit. A further demand for literature necessitated my companion, with his rapidly dwindling stock, exercising some restriction in liberality when women and children had sometimes to be refused. The anticipated, fresh supply had gone astray in a similar manner to the bread, meat, and fresh vegetables, to say nothing of the six dozen eggs that the Cunninghams had so thoughtfully sent for us. Fortunately, my skins had been safely delivered,

and this was the one thing vitally important ; the other, secondary.

Entering the single, narrow street, we paid a visit to the local headman who received us with every attention, promising to do what he could in locating the missing caravan ; and, if found, he would return the cotton-wool, precious nowadays, to Tachienlu. We proceeded past the extensive walls that formerly served as protection to a much more extensive populace. On reaching the end of the plain, the trail began to rise, when a house on the left was pointed out to me as the birthplace of a former Dalai Lama. With the trail rising more steeply, we took shelter below the summit of the pass (14,100 feet) within a tent of nomads, when the cold rain increased.

A pair of hoopoes, but little else,¹ had been seen at the foot of the pass, where on the summit grew asters and blue poppyworts. On the descent grand forest came into view ; when, diverging to the right along the old trail, I found my first giant Asphodel,² seven feet in height, with cylindrical two-foot spire of pinkish flowers. My companion, keeping to the direct trail, was shortly lost to view. Within the next half hour, Eared-pheasants, in a party of at least fifty adults, with their young, attracted my notice, on this occasion below, and not above as so frequently happened, unexpectedly. Farther on a beautiful Rosefinch³ was obtained, as well as some Tits,⁴ and a Laughing-thrush⁵ ; for now the trail, winding in and out of the gullies, overgrown, but only delightfully so, as not unnecessarily to impede my progress, was at last lost in the intricacies of stream and mound. Reluctantly I took a 'short cut' through much tangled growth, reaching the main trail at the bottom of this land-locked valley after a declivitous descent, with no apparent trace of any ponies' having passed. So our caravan must still be behind. Reaching a mixed group of Tibetans, encamped—an unusual sight to see their women in camp—my Nashi boys failed to make themselves understood. Shouts from the

¹ *Lycæna argus* L. A solitary specimen of the Silver-studded Blue was obtained on August 1.

² *Eremurus robustus*.

³ *Erythrina trifasciata trifasciata* (Verr.).

⁴ *Parus rufonuchalis beavani* (Jerd.).

⁵ *Garrulax maxima maxima* (Verr.).

knoll above disclosed the fact of my companion's having halted the caravan at an ideal site. The clouds, lifting, Jhara was disclosed once again, as if blocking our retreat to the south, but there was one route open over the Haitzeshan Pass. Ming-sän was the last to arrive, having had no success with pheasants.

The rise had been gradual, after the initial, sharp descent had been overcome, as by midday we had only risen 200 feet above our last evening's halt at 13,000 feet. Having crossed the stream that had its source on the west flank of Jhara and flowed north, when, below our last camp, it was lost to view in a defile, presumably bearing east; we were now on the right bank, well away from the river that hugged the western side of this picturesque valley. Gould's Grey-headed Thrush was frequently seen; but, apart from the sombre coloured squirrel, also last seen south of Kwanchai, butterflies, beetles and flowers exclusively occupied our attention. Brilliant with scarlet berries, the rowan or mountain ash forced itself upon one's notice; while the cherry was more ubiquitous weighted with fruit, tart but palliative to dry throats; dark green pines, in mass, usurped whole slopes where rhododendron, now past flowering, must have produced waves of colour in this trough-like valley that, so far as seen, had no counterpart.

Directing my attention to an immense, perched rock on its eastern flank, my companion remarked that from a certain point marauders had previously utilized its cover and the extensive outlook to shoot down on passing caravans. Provided that no attempt was made to diminish the intervening distance and rush tactics were not employed, though it would not be a difficult matter to cause consternation, or complete disorganization, if taken unawares, it would have required an exceptional marksman to hit a single object, animal or man, rapidly moving across his line of fire; but the phlegmatic yak having its own pace, it must have ended in many a wholesale looting: hence this route's ill repute.

Nomad Tibetans were encamped in the lower meadows, encompassed by their grunting, shaggy bovines, both uncouth yet equally picturesque. Nearer with every step, glacier and snow shone out in crystal purity. Thus developed a scene of awe-inspiring grandeur, where at a prodigious height soared

a pair of lämmergeyers over a region, inaccessible to human mortals—a sight incomparable in Nature's majesty! Turning sharply to the left, the trail rapidly rose, when we pitched camp on the summit, at 15,000 feet, in a perishing blizzard that chilled us to the bone.

Fortunately every effort had been made to secure the numerous alpine plants, among which was one, cushion-rosette in form, and a cyclamen, white and dwarfed in height. Darkness soon fell; reluctant as the muleteers had been to come this far, the reason was now apparent. What must have been a heroic effort, Aziza popped in, cheerful besides, with the mock-turtle soup—a solace to our empty stomachs!

More than recompensed for last night's ordeal, as the sun shone forth the day opened with promise. Below, appeared the smallest tarn, one of four, deep sapphire blue, with conifers abutting on its boulder-strewn shore, now bathed in brilliant sunshine, and the ground carpeted at our feet, lavish in diverse colours. Taking full advantage of the fleeting moments to secure the last glimpse of Jhara's ice-fields before the clouds descended, a further survey of our surroundings afterwards resulted in additional botanical and entomological¹ material of the choicest description. Rapidly descending, the watershed was crossed, and with this, Jhara had for the last time hidden its secrets from our gaze.

Similar features in woodland prevailed in another straggling valley. Reaching our midday halt, Sintientze, 12,700 feet, south of where the trail converged from the Dabo pass, Eared-pheasants were unusually noisy in a lateral ravine to the east, where Jungle-crows were making themselves a nuisance. On this occasion, we were more fortunate in obtaining the *Maji*, as the Eared Pheasant is designated by the Chinese. Unexpected in this confined habitat, odd paddy-birds were in occupation of limited swampy-ground; here we quickly finished our midday meal, very short of provisions.

Having accomplished an unusually long march, Tsongku, 11,300 feet, proved a haven of rest, where my companion

¹ *Erebia sedakovii* Ev. *Satyrus dryas astræa* Leech. *Pararge thibetana* Oberth. *Argynnis gemmata* Btlr. *Argynnis gong* Oberth. *Argynnis clara manis* Fruhs. *Zephyrus bieti* Oberth. *Lycæna eros helena* Gr.-Grsh.

found room inside the house secure from the rumbling of running water, and the corner in the stalls suited me. The vicious dog was summarily removed to the house-top. Artificial lighting had not progressed in accordance with modern schemes, as all the available light, apart from glowing embers of the fire, was the outcome from wisps of straw, which were placed into several holes of a suspended, slate slab. Our hostess showed a deep sense of gratitude for payment that amply covered fuel and accommodation.

Before the muleteers were ready, divesting myself of all apparel, I enjoyed a long-overdue bath ; but I found it difficult to obtain a lather, so permeated was the hot water with iron or sulphur. Some girls appearing on the scene proved that there were others who awaited their turn. Crossing to the right bank, and beyond a lateral stream, an on-coming yak caravan hesitated at our approach, where little room was left to squeeze past on a treacherous patch of the narrow trail. Yesterday, a youth had mentioned in passing that there had been a mutiny amongst the troops in Tachienlu, and, though he was on furlough, orders had reached him that he was to return. The last village reached had an air of sullen indifference in the attitude of several soldiers. The opium den was occupied ; but we did not consider it advisable to question pointedly, as we might get further particulars to-day. As it turned out, there had been a mutiny, but at Batang ; while, almost as bad, an officer had been shot in the streets of Tachienlu. In consequence, we were not sure of our reception on arrival.

By noon we had reached a substantial bridge, when advantage was taken of the hot sunshine to dry wet tents. Once again on the left bank, portions of the trail were so frequented by choice butterflies¹ that the scene partook of a tropical aspect. Misled by a villager, instead of keeping to the lower and more recent trail, I found myself on the old trail, having risen considerably and traversed a precarious

¹ *Apatura bieti* Oberth. Although only one specimen of this rare insect was secured, two others were noticed that seldom settled on the path, to return out of reach on overhanging vegetation. *Metaporis larraldei melania* Oberth. *Neptis alurina* Brem. & Grey., a single specimen, met with nowhere else. *Zephyrus icana* Moore., a single, two were obtained later in Muping. *Argynnis laodice samana* Fruhst.

gully. No one in view, a rare *Lycænid*¹ butterfly was caught with my fingers but slightly damaged in the act, which was to be seen only once again. On the descent between walled meadows, pink with buckwheat,² hoopoes put in another appearance. In time, the regularly travelled trail was reached, when a large caravan was met, evidently on its way to a halt where the yaks could obtain grazing, of which there was little available hereabouts. The boys exploited the wayside feeding-houses. With my going on ahead 'Jhagha' preferred my company, when other caravans were passed, halted and in transit, along the awkward bends of the trail that skirted the rocky face of the mountain.

To the right, ravine after ravine demarcated huge masses of mountain, bold in their ruggedness. It was not until the river had been again crossed at a large village, when a view was obtained of a snow mountain, on looking in a south-eastern direction, which reared its summit above anything to my immediate left and right, from a point where it must be seldom and only visible. 'Jhagha' had been assailed by every dog in turn, and she had a particularly rough time when overcoming the numerous steps as we left the left bank. Villagers on their return from market became more numerous. Darkness fell. Nearing the drill-ground much shouting heralded the voices of a detachment of troops about to leave on the morrow when, on such occasions, an exuberance of spirits is expected. Nevertheless, conscious of an anti-foreign atmosphere, real or unreal, a whine from 'Jhagha' at my heels, fagged out as she was, denoted an undeserved kick. The shutters of the shops in the narrow street were being replaced; with a few more paces came a respite, and greetings from my hospitable friends within the compound of the C.I.M. Doubtless Edgar, like myself, experienced the sense of satisfaction at the termination of this successful trip; and the boys, similarly relieved.

¹ *Zephyrus cælistis* Leur.

On this march (Aug. 6) at higher altitudes were obtained: *Colias fieldii chinensis* Verity, common and widely spread of which over one hundred were obtained at high altitudes around Tachienlu. *Gonepteryx alvinda* Blanch. Twenty-two specimens were collected, which had not been so plentiful since Ngulukö. *Melanargia halimede* Mén. *Parage episcopalis* Oberth., six specimens, obtained nowhere else. *Parage thibetana* Oberth. *Zephyrus bieti* Oberth. In numbers.

² *Fagopyrum esculentum*.

Hemmed in by abruptly rising mountains, where the river disputes the right of ownership and bisects the limited ground with its inhabitants; there can be few towns with less hours of sunshine within a similar latitude. During my terms of residence there was no lack of this beneficial influence, which however was an unusually dry summer, shattering the adage of any deficiency in Szechwan "that so rarely does the sun shine that the dogs are said to bark at him". Having no further use for my pony it was put out to graze at Ulongkong, and Ming-sän, scenting a gift—inveterate gamblers as all of them are—sold his pony, backing his luck.

Occupied with week-day tuition, and wisely only imparting instruction by means of the Chinese language, Mr and Mrs Cunningham each took their daily class of boys and girls, respectively; on Sundays there were the customary services for adults and mixed children. To provide for healthy recreation, tennis and hockey had been introduced; football had also taken a strong hold in the estimation of the town's youths, where great keenness was displayed in the compound. Students of a more advanced age profited by these advances for their health and leisure; a number regularly took advantage of tennis, when seldom, if ever, was a clear fault disputed, and undoubtedly they had profited by the unwritten law. Callers were frequent, whether it was a batch of dishevelled but cheerful Tibetans, a genial Chinese Official, or a manifestation of the Supreme Holiness embodied in a Living Buddha, nevertheless, possessor of a gramophone and not impervious to Western marvels, one and all were made welcome with true hospitality. The Nationalist Government having granted a limited number of free scholarships, a number of students left the town for Nanking before my departure.

Beyond the town, numerous, level bamboo-ropes spanned the river, enabling contact to be made between the opposing banks; villagers frequently utilized this method of defeating the turmoil of water, with no other means of access to and from the bazaar.

Much time was taken up with drying large skins, both bird and mammal; boxes, frequently opened out for inspection, had to undergo a final search for *dermestids* or fur-devouring beetles, in which pests and bluebottles, aided by the prevalent, high temperatures, Tachienlu indeed swarmed. A short-

age of cotton-wool was apparent as Laoyang, faithfully carrying out instructions to the letter in this respect, had stripped me of everything even to the best quality used for wrapping bird-skins. No more to be had locally, a recourse in these circumstances to the wrapping, already in permanent position, or what had intended to be so, until removed at the journey's end, necessitated extra work ; and it might lead to a ruffling, if only temporary, of feathers, however carefully packed, through rough handling of the packages once they had left my direct charge. There was nothing else for it, if this enterprise—and I had not finished—was to continue. At last, my skins thoroughly dried, with a readjustment of specimens from extraneous trunks, every box that could be finally closed down was securely fixed with whatever nails and screws could be obtained locally. When a deficiency of these simple and necessary trifles of civilization was apparent, the carpenter substituted wooden plugs. Plants and insects were carefully gone through, and papers were changed where required. Formaline and spirit tins were soldered and packed inside boxes. To complete this task, fresh, plastic sheep-hides were sewn encircling each package, to avoid any damp penetrating through rain, or when in transit by raft and junk. This work was accomplished by local men whose special job it is, and at which they are adept.

A reassortment of equipment reduced me to the barest essentials when the next trip would mean the minimum of kit, as everything would have to be carried without assistance from any beast of burden. Free to attend to further preparations took me frequently through the confined streets, when a casual, passing inspection of the furrier's stock proved that many pelts of the rarer cats, to mention the Marbled Cat¹ and the Snow Leopard² or Ounce, as here represented, could only have been the production from an extensive tract of country, giving rise to contemplation on how much longer would the supply last. For creatures so beautiful to be utilized for a barbaric purpose of adornment by the decree of Fashion³ in this material age of vandalism, with no safeguard for their protection ; with the inevitable result in extermin-

¹ *Felis marmorata* Martin.

² *Felis uncia* Schreber.

³ The world's reptiles are now in turn being subject to exploitation !

ination, it seemed an excessive waste of wild-life for which future generations will curse the very name of our vaunted civilization. Rugs and furs having no interest for me, and no skulls, exhibited, these places attracted me no further. Meeting a Tibetan with the fresh skull of a leopard, undamaged by fire, and the vertebrae of the tail which, he stated, had been obtained at Rombatza (The Garden of Eastern Tibet) in Derge, fifteen days' journey north-west of Tachienlu; to save it from obscurity in a lamasery I was glad of a record of this carnivore from a locality even farther north in distribution than it had been located by myself.

For the antiquary and curio collector, there could be no more fascinating occupation than that of rummaging among the junk of the marine-store dealers, or pawn-shops apparently, with their heterogeneous accumulation of trinkets and ornaments, bewildering in diversity. For an enthusiast, so inclined, the only drawback would be fleeting time, impeded by the interminable bargaining. Stacked inside the yard of a rich merchant lay hundreds of skin-coated packages, uniform in size, of so-called tea, the produce of the Yachou district, composed of coarse leaf and stalk, crudely prepared—'manufactured' would be a misapplied term—eventually bound for Tibet. Almost daily, droves of yaks laboured along the narrow, fetid street; but never a yak proceeded south, as the incoming supply, awaiting to be piled, meant many a weary, day's drudgery for the coolies—a trade and method of transport which must have been carried on for a considerable period of time, if the worn rocks and holes caused by the supporting pole and feet on this trail bore witness. Amongst the boulders beyond the east gate two species of stately lilies grew, where now anemones profusely flourished. Apart from a solitary *Parnassius*,¹ unexpected at so low an altitude, 8,400 feet, butterflies were more plentiful in this locality than outside the north gate by which we had last entered.

¹ *Parnassius imperator imperator* Oberth.



(Upper) "AT EVERY UNDULATION WOULD APPEAR VALLEY . . . ,
AND RIDGE . . . , UNLESS BLOCKED TO VIEW BY THE FORESTED
SLOPES OF SOME PROTRUDING EMINENCE." P. 49.

(Lower) "RHODODENDRON IN BLOOM . . . , ADORNED THE FORE-
GROUND, HEIGHTENED BY THE DARK GREEN FOLIAGE OF THE
PINES." P. 48.

CHAPTER VII

WITHIN THE HEART OF MUPING

DETERMINED to penetrate into the old Tibetan principality of Muping, no longer independent since its abolition by the Peking Government, and, like all the other, small, western principalities, now under the jurisdiction of China; inquiries were entered upon to profit, without delay, by what information was forthcoming, even nowadays wrapped in a halo of mystery. Muping came into notice through the zoological researches of a Franciscan priest, l'Abbé David, who, according to the *Encyclopaedia Sinica*, "by arrangement with the Franciscan Order and the Paris Museum, was able to devote his services wholly in the interests of Natural History. Apart from his earlier and later travels, he arrived in Chengtu in January 1869, explored first the mountains lying to the north of that city and proceeded to Mupin, a Tibetan principality, eight days' journey north-west of Chengtu, where he remained until November 1869." The town of Muping was invariably marked on the old maps with the symbolic cross, but it has been deleted from time to time as if it did not exist; it lies west-south-west of Chengtu, if correctly placed on recent maps. Whether Abbé David actually resided in the town itself, I was unable to find out; but at present there is no R.C. Mission, and the only one I am acquainted with, except Mongong in the north, is at Kochaihopa in the extreme west, where we stayed for two nights, and this mission was in charge of a native convert. It was from this region that the first Giant Panda or Parti-coloured Bear, a strikingly marked and superficially bear-like mammal, with distinctive characters, remote from the true bears, and also herbivorous, described by Milne-Edwards in 1870, now known as *Ailuropoda melanoleuca*, and other zoological treasures were made known to science through

the media of this savant. Hence, my long-awaited desire to unravel the secrets of its inhospitable and dreaded inaccessibility.

Scanty and negligible information resulted from our initial inquiries, as the boys, in fear of my further—to them—escapade, did little, or could accomplish anything tangible. So the Catholic Fathers were appealed to, as Edgar knew Père Charrier had been stationed at Mongong, though he had not traversed any route to the town of Muping. The known route, and the only one, recommended, entered from the south; but this route was the one by which we might have to complete our exit. At last, a former Meipong villager appeared, who stated he knew of a route viâ Yeutong, an adjoining region, likewise a former principality, frequently confused with Muping. It little mattered if he did not undertake the journey, and, as rumour had it, for a good reason, having been once beaten for theft, when he had produced the carriers. Meanwhile, Laofang, a youth of doubtful antecedents, had also appeared, who, as time advanced, proved that he was actually acquainted with the one and only trail left to us by which this region could be traversed in two radiately opposed directions.

Taking leave of the indefatigable Dr and Mrs Andrews, our baggage was subjected to a cursory inspection before the carriers were allowed to proceed through the east gate, which was promptly remedied on the presentation of my card; carriers were well on the way by the time my friends, the Cunninghams, and I, had arrived, my companion having gone on ahead. Following the right bank of the river, now in spate, turbulent and foaming, pounding its course headlong in one continuous cataract; beautifully bright as the morning had been, it became decidedly warmer with the rapid fall in altitude, and by midday a small hamlet gave us a respite from the heat in this deep defile. The Brown Dipper, White-capped and Plumbeous Redstarts, and Himalayan Whistling-thrush, loved the boulder-strewn bed where also occurred the Little Forktail, which had been long absent; and, on a mere patch of a sandy spit where the turmoil of water bifurcated, the diminutive Common Sandpiper¹ was in view. Undemonstrative, the fatalist, 'Jhagha', had now

¹*Actitis hypoleucos* (L.).

become part of our caravan, having left her former master. Although Ming-sän protested that she had been presented to him, or rather to me, the fact remained she preferred our company to that of Laosang who had days ago reached his native village; and travel, she must, with us when Laosang's sister in Tachienlu refused to take charge of her. Hidden away in some dark corner, and at last, located, we were once again united in strength. We had not gone far when we met two deserters under escort, one of whom was unusually tall for a Chinaman, head and shoulders above the rest, wanted on a charge of murder in respect to the officer, shot a fortnight ago.

Nothing could be more severe on feet, shod either in boots or sandals, than this declivitous, rocky trail keeping in close proximity to the cataract which drops over 3,000 feet in fifteen miles. Houses in ruins, perilously near to the overhanging crags, marked the site of a disaster by an avalanche. So confined and restricted in limited ground, suitable for cultivation, were other dwellings, this ever-present danger would be constantly in mind, if it were not for an impassive regard for the hazards of life; this peril only meant such a one. Disappointment ensued at losing the Brown Dipper,¹ wariest of birds, when one was shot, only to dive as Ming-sän was about to grasp his trophy, which looked as if this requisite species would be unobtainable, if my bad luck persisted.

Of no particular advantage in proceeding farther, on arriving at the squalid village of Zuthi, 6,900 feet, we fixed on quarters where, if effluvia from the gutter permeated the atmosphere through the door, I left ajar—an extraordinary procedure to the proprietor who failed to thwart my final attempt when everyone slept—the prevalent stifling conditions were to some extent modified. An unexpected arrival now appeared in Laoyang, secundus, a pseudo-Tibetan, who had previously performed several onerous duties, committed to his care by my companion, and he had accompanied him on not a few journeys. Hearing that his former master was in need of a servant by some vague manner, he had arrived in Tachienlu after our departure, making haste to overtake

¹ *Cinclus pallasii souliei* Oust.

The butterfly, *Pseudegolis wedah* Koll., was obtained on this march; August 16, which is generally confined to lower altitudes.

us. My stock of medicine, quinine included, having been omitted, possibly unwisely, except an antidote for dysentery, I was unable to satisfy any requests for simple remedies. Boracic ointment for trachoma, and iodine for goitre, had been liberally dealt out whenever possible; and, on many an occasion, I experienced a pang of regret at my inability to counteract the ravage of disease, so rampant, when the mere rudiments of simple hygiene and cleanliness were of more importance than drugs; but baggage had been reduced to the bare limit.

Coincidental with the change in altitude, a marked absence of the trees, previously encountered, was noticeable, where bamboo and walnut now took the place of prickly oak, rhododendrons and conifers. As expected, the birds also partook in this transition. Bulbuls and flycatchers, absent at higher altitudes, were much to the fore; on the following morning an interesting *Suthora* or Crow Tit,¹ in parties, was obtained for the first occasion. Numbers of Sino-Himalayan forms of butterflies² flitted about the shrubs, and frequented the cess-pools alongside every house, when several species of Swallowtail³ were netted, some unfortunately past their zenith in splendour; while on the trail, a Sapphire,⁴ with a faint red edging on a yellow ground, denoted an instantaneous closing of wings where blue, metallic iridescence had been startlingly prominent but a moment before. Progress was slow in consequence. Lizards, approached with caution, more often than not retreated with alacrity into the crevices of the rocks where overhanging vegetation hindered attempts at capture. Passing straggling hamlets, eventually the out-

¹ *Suthora alphonsiana alphonsiana* Verr.

² The following butterflies were obtained on August 16-17. *Rhaphicera dumicola* Oberth. *Callerebia annanda polyphemus* Oberth. *Ypthima civis* Leech. *Pararge majuscula* Leech. Only one specimen obtained which is never plentiful. *Diagora subviridis chinensis* Leech. *Neptis hylas oda* Fruhst. *Junonia almana* L. *Metaporia larraldei melania* Oberth. *Melitæa yuenty* Oberth. Two specimens, only obtained in this locality. *Argynnis zenobia* Leech. Two specimens. *Argynnis laodice samana* Fruhst. *Dodona eugenes maculosa* Leech. Seven specimens. *Dodona durga sinica* Mengel. Six specimens. *Chrysophanus li* Oberth. *Everes zuthus* Leech. Five specimens. *Satarupa sinica sinica* Feld. *Zizera mahe opalina* Pouj. *Lycænopsis (Cyaniris) argiolus* L. *Pamphila abax* Oberth. *Baoris (Parnara) sinensis* Mab. *Aeromachus inachus chinensis* El. *Daimio tethys moorei* Mab. *Carterocephalus abax* Oberth. Two males.

³ *Papilio xuthus* L. Fifteen specimens. *Papilio alcinous confusus* Roths.

⁴ *Heliophorus saphir* Blanch.

skirts of a larger village in a single thoroughfare was reached, where a pool of foul liquid almost blocked our entry. But for the curiosity of a group of villagers, and the slothful movements of passers-by, other choice butterflies would have been taken; and the saddest loss of all were some four or five clear-wing, humble-bee moths, dipping with almost lightning rapidity into the putrid puddle. Difficult to catch at any time, but now disturbed, more so, they had much against my ardent wish to be left, when no further time was wasted in getting away from a critical audience who had hampered me by their needless presence when a little consideration and less hilarity would have been more agreeable.

Atrociously hot, aptly described, by midday we had reached Waszakou at 5,300 feet, above the junction of the Lu with the Tung Ho. Rather than subject myself unnecessarily to the odours, both varied, pungent and penetrating, that prevailed, I crossed the chain-bridge where the boys already had got to work on the fruit of the prickly pear (*Opuntia*), which grew lavishly in this quarter. As this pest, usually regarded as unwanted, is not endemic but an introduction, a more suitable habitat for its intended dispersal could not well be imagined. Rolling the edible fruit, by foot on ground, to get rid of the minute, hirsute annoyance to lips; on my part, more were eaten than it was prudent, and I was not the exception. Ascending the perpendicular crags, overlooking the village and river, with its rough, scanty foothold, our carriers were found halted at a wayside shrine, ready to partake of food; but, so limited was the hollowed-out ledge, it was considered desirable to proceed when, on turning the corner, the boys left the trail to descend to a solitary house. The prospect was wild and captivating: bare rock, grim and forbidding, rising abruptly out of the river where both waters met in turmoil of current. Ahead, to the north, stretched the Tung Ho lost to view at a bend of the gorge.

We continued over undulating ground where thorny scrub and rank aromatic herbage were seared by the prevailing hot wind. While the present circumstances seemed to be abnormal, even in this defile, for the month of August, the parched nature of our immediate environment pointed to our being within a restricted zone of comparatively light

rainfall, compared with the country, recently traversed; and, as I was to discover, to be traversed later. After a long tramp, a welcome relief came with a lone house where, before our midday repast—too long delayed—a further consignment of the prickly pear, now awaiting consumption, and steeping in a birch-bucket of water, was soon disposed of. Shortly afterwards the dilapidated lamasery of Kutsa, 5,825 feet, appeared on the rough ground within a short distance of the river, where it was decided to stay. Crow-tits¹ were numerous in large, family parties, frequenting the thorny shrubs; while a Squirrel,² not previously met with, scuttled along the tumble-down walls surrounding former cultivation, which however evaded capture unfortunately, so quickly did it disappear. Mosquitos were said to be active after dark; but, foolishly disregarding local advice when stagnant pools were nowhere visible on this arid ground, I failed to take into account the usual foul breeding-place. So far, never having had occasion to make use of the requisite net, it was only when too late to remedy this omission, the presence of these bloodsuckers was perfectly obvious. My companion, inside one of the upper rooms, experienced the same inconvenience as myself on the veranda. A hot night was superseded at daybreak with a cooler atmosphere, but with every indication of a grilling day. Some short distance away lay a pool of no great depth, deceptive in its transparency, surrounded by willows and poplars, bedecked with the usual rags, which were revealed in shadows, sharply defined in outline surely never to be surpassed; while the crystal clarity of the water partook of all the turquoise tints, imaginable.

With slight undulations between thickets of shrubs, but few dwellings were passed; though, on the slopes of the river's left bank, intersected by ravines, several compact hamlets, strikingly picturesque in situation and composition, and surrounded by small patches of cultivation, looked snugly secluded in our present predicament, sweltering under the tropical heat and scorched by an unmerciful sun. My good resolution to shun all attempt to satisfy a thirst had rarely

¹ *Suthora alphonsiana alphonsiana* Verr.

² *Sciurotamias davidanus* M.-Edw.

Gurelca masuriensis sangaica Btl. This interesting hawk-moth was also obtained on August 17.

been broken; but today everyone drank liberally at the streams—but few there were—when the river did equally as well. 'Jhagha', almost completely exhausted, partially immersed herself in the river, and many were the beckonings of encouragement to obtain a response. Coming upon cultivation, the Cinnamon Sparrow¹ was again established. Hereabouts a butterfly,² flitted, settling expanded on the ground, bright yellow, edged with black, and a prominent blue spot on the hind wings, widely spread in the East; but, in my experience, absent from the wetter regions. We adjourned for a respite from the heat at this wayside halt, represented by a small habitation, when my companion obtained a first instalment of cherished honey.

Nearing the ferry-crossing we stopped at the first house, intent on recuperating after a trying ordeal—lucky that no one was down with sunstroke—but a leper being in occupation, we moved on to the second and remaining house. Shortly afterwards the river-bank was reached; the first boat-load, after ascending the strong current for the requisite distance to effect a satisfactory landing, was soon within the rapidly flowing current, and, by dexterous handling, safely landed some 200 yards short of the village of Chingshui, 6,000 feet. With the arrival of the rest of the carriers in the next two relays, the ferrymen had completed their task, whence we all repaired to the village.

Discussing whether to proceed or remain, in either case agreeable to us; leaving our kit and pledged to return in the morning most of the women left for their native village, to which they had consented to transport us in accordance with the agreement. Pomegranates, peaches, and pear trees, surrounded the village; little or no restriction was placed in our way to partake of the fruit. However, if the pears were passable, the peaches were little better, and the pomegranates³ were unripe. Walnuts and chestnuts were always welcome; during this march everyone had liberally partaken beneath a walnut tree which received many a volley of stones and finally a vigorous shaking, when accepting several handfuls of the nutritious nuts, already shelled, and in par-

¹ *Passer rutilans rutilans* (Temm.).

² *Junonia hierta* Fab.

³ *Punica Granatum*.

ticular from one of the female carriers, possibly, unwittingly, an elastic, nuptial knot had been tied in my ignorance of local customs. While it was a merry throng which scrambled under that walnut tree; and, in a land where polyandry and polygamy are about proportionately equal, I may have inadvertently committed bigamy without any further ceremony and complications to those the traveller, Cooper,¹ was subjected.

Difficult to detect among the verdure, Whiteeyes² in pairs were again seen, indicating congenial conditions for this usually low-altitudinal species. Welcomed by the headman, I slept on the roof of his house. If black clouds seemed like relieving an oppressive night, only a few drops of rain fell. Next morning, the carriers having early returned, no time was lost in getting under way, as appearances pointed again to fierce heat. Immediately we began a stiff ascent of 2,500 feet behind the village, leaving the river, which we were however to see again two days later. Whilst my companion plodded steadily on at his accustomed pace, seldom varying, my method differed in tackling stiff gradients, because I preferred to take 'a breather' after having accomplished a requisite distance at a quicker pace. Nearing the summit the Hill Warbler³ was again descried, and it was certainly more numerous than could be inferred from the few birds seen.

Better late than never and totally unexpected, leading a couple of sturdy ponies, two servants of the Meipong magistrate requested us to mount, which could not be refused, and augured well for a friendly reception. Resting for a brief interval on the summit, shaded by the revered trees, both the villagers and the solitary lama took much interest in my binocular that had recently almost become common property. An equally sharp descent of some 500 feet, and we had arrived

¹ Mentioned in Cooper's *Travels of a Pioneer of Commerce*.

² *Zosterops simplex simplex* Swinh.

³ *Suya crinigera catharia* (Reich.).

The following butterflies were collected on August 19: *Colias hyale* L. Unexpected but only a single specimen. *Pieris rapæ* L. Widely spread. *Zophoessa procne* Leech. *Ypthima ciris* Leech. The second occasion, a single specimen. *Callerebia pratorum* Oberth. *Callerebia annanda polyphemus* Oberth. The second occasion, a single specimen. *Neptis mahendra extensa* Leech. *Argynnis sagana* Dbl. Hew. A single specimen. *Argynnis laodice samana* Fruhst. *Hyporion princeps* Oberth. A single specimen. *Chrysophanus li* Oberth.

at Meipong 7,900 feet, where we were received by the magistrate and shown into a neighbouring house, when a repast of rice was placed before each of us. Every celebrity in the place duly put in an appearance, and my companion was soon occupied answering the ordinary questions, which I was more fortunately spared. Refined in manner, the local missionary—a charming little woman converted to Roman Catholicism—also paid us a call, and in this courtesy she was an object-lesson to religious bigots. Unfortunately, 'Jhagha' had failed again to appear, and it was evident she had been left behind; and, most likely, having entered a house she had been frustrated in making an exit. Under pain and penalty to all concerned, it was not until next morning she arrived in charge of a villager, when these repeated lapses denoted that she was to be a great care, at least when we were on the move; but, with the rapid descent in recent days and the abnormal heat, who could blame her for quietly retiring into obscurity whenever the opportunity permitted.

If the crops of maize were to thrive, rain would not have to be long delayed; many an anxious inquiry had been put to us: 'could we divine its proximity?' Seemingly, as far off as ever, to judge by the mere wisps of cloud around the summits of the jagged and contorted peaks, overlooking the adjacent depth, where from a precarious footing at one corner of our quarters I gazed in rapture at the prospect even now in glaring sunshine, arresting in grandeur. However the serious outlook for the villagers demanded attention, when the local method of prognostication took a concourse in the afternoon to a neighbouring slope, where every archer the village could produce aimed at a fixed object, with varying success; when, after an eager rush to examine how each arrow had fallen, some clue from the angle of repose might be forthcoming regarding the long-expected and desired benefactor. Whether any tangible evidence resulted, it was open to question; but a banquet followed, and the girls sang and danced in one extended line until midnight. Apart from a subdued silence and interchange of victuals, the repast was devoid of any particular incidents, but it must have had considerable significance. Where conversation had been absent before in a prolonged silence; with nightfall, voices above in uninterrupted, provocative talk prevented any sleep, at least on my part,

though my companion was not inconvenienced. Besides, I was aware of the presence of other nightly visitors, so removed my stretcher outside, where eventually belated rest was obtained. The morning disclosed the identity of my uninvited guests when Aziza made war on that lover of darkness and filth, lurking in every crevice of wood, and ready to drop down on a newcomer; when, on such occasions, a camp-stretcher avails nothing, with occupants above. 'Jhagha' having been produced, without delay we were out, and we had left the picturesque buildings, comprising the magistrate's residence, with a fresh relay of carriers who were to take us to Kochaihopa, a short distance beyond the boundary of Yeutong, intimating our departure to our host, lethargic after 'a late night', by note.

Continuing on the descent, the boys and I, on reaching the hamlet in the bottom of the valley, failed to take the correct path by which my companion and Laofang had preceded us; but I was not aware of our predicament until we had reached another hamlet on the rise, when my retinue were just as perplexed in interrogation and the subsequent replies as myself; and there were several bifurcations branching off from our last halt. One trail only lay to the right; but, somehow, I did not think my companion could have gone in that direction. If so, we might be hopelessly adrift. The only alternative was to advance when ultimately, owing to the trail fizzling out in the brushwood, there was nothing for it but to descend; shortly afterwards a female Elegant Pheasant was flushed.

We were still well ahead of our carriers, unnecessarily delayed at the start. Perhaps they would furnish a clue to the correct trail, if carefully watched on their descent, now appearing like ants in the distance and barely recognizable without the aid of binocular. Once in the hollow, however, they rapidly disappeared from view. Reaching a lone house, with difficulty information was divulged that a route to Muping followed the stream, but it was impassable owing to the bridges being in disrepair or down. After crossing the stream, we had left this ridge when, after a tiresome ascent, we found ourselves on a second ridge while botanizing and insect-collecting.¹ Having gained the summit of the trail, I sketched

¹ Of butterflies. *Argynnis adippe ornatissima* Leech. Five specimens were obtained on August 20. This is the form of moderate altitudes.

in outline the panorama of snow mountains lying south-west. We accepted the invitation of an aged villager to enter his house, when a refreshing herb drink, with some resemblance to tea, was kindly provided. On leaving, his son offered to direct us to the trail, now fairly obvious, yet along a third ridge, which could be reached by an undulating cross trail. Once arrived at this last cluster of houses, we were actually ahead of my companion, who arrived shortly afterwards, surprised to see us, when he had deputed Laoyang to institute inquiries as soon as we were missed. Fortunately, with no mist or rain to retard visibility, it could only be a matter of time before we met; and, had adverse conditions prevailed, I should have never attempted in continuing, but I should have returned on my tracks. Apart from having gone through rough country, with unnecessary descents, the actual rise was less pronounced than the almost perpendicular trail that the rest had followed.

With the arrival of the carriers, we lunched before attacking a further length of a steep ascent. After passing secluded fields of the opium poppy, we had reached 10,800 feet, having risen some 3,800 feet from the valley below Meipong. Standing on a narrow ledge, the scene was astounding in its impressiveness; even the boys, who had seen many breathless prospects, gave vent to a spasmodic gasp of surprise. Away into the distance stretched the Tung Ho, wriggling through a canyon, where a stone let loose at one's feet would bound in an unobstructed plunge of some 4,000 feet into the turbulent water, tumbling over rapids in array; through a region, distorted and rent, devoid of all sign of life.

Typical of *takin* country at its best, or worst, Laoyang, secundus, intervened with the information that it was somewhere in the mountains beyond whither he had accompanied a sportsman when one of these remarkable animals, allied to both goat and antelope, was obtained. Who it was, he had lost recollection, if he ever did know; but probably it had reference to Capt. Malcolm McNeill,¹ who shot over Yeutong in August 1908, though Mr M. Mitchell shot *takin* around Tachienlu in May 1907, where also Lieut. J. W. Brooke had previously obtained specimens.

¹ Presumably the same sportsman, in honour of whom Lydekker described the Szechwan Deer with wapiti-like antlers, *Cervus macneilli*.

Leaving this amazing prospect, within a few hundred feet the lower slopes of the mountains of Muping in fantastic outline of serrated ridges came more into prominence, and the depth of the valley through which we would have to descend was obvious with the expansive and unobstructed view. Having dropped some seven hundred feet, my companion beckoned me to halt, when we decided to camp on the trail, where the feeble-trickling spring would supply us with all the water required for culinary purposes, if little there would be for anything else. The carriers, being in agreement, continued with unwanted kit ; of whom others, after leaving what was required, promised to return on the following morning. My companion improvised his mattress of branches and brush-wood ; my tents and ground-sheet, divided between the boys and him, served for extra protection from moisture ; though, as it so happened, they could not be proof against a percolation in the middle of the trail that had not been noticed previously. This slope of the mountain was well wooded ; once the camp-fire was alight, Laoyang, secundus, improvised a novel method for parching his *tsamba* : first, heating a smooth and spherical stone of a handy size that had been obtained somewhere, beforehand ; and, hastily pressing the dough completely round, again placing it in the fire, when in a few moments it was withdrawn baked, as well as so crude a method would allow.

Unfortunately, little anticipating what a delightful country surrounded us in our present situation, so far as the main object of this trip was concerned, it was too late to suggest waiting here another day, now that the requisite orders had not been given overnight. ' Jhagha ' had incessantly barked throughout the night, so totally unaccustomed to this type of country ; and she must have been aware of sounds, unheard by us. The morning opened to sporadic calls of a game-bird. More likely than not, emanating from a pheasant, but the perpetrator remained undetermined, though a search was instituted forthwith. Butterflies¹ were early on the wing,

¹ The following butterflies were collected on August 21 : *Satyrus padma* Koll. Twelve specimens, met with nowhere else. *Argynnis zenobia* Leech. A single female specimen, not met with again. *Zephyrus icana* Moore. Two further specimens obtained of this insect which is never plentiful. *Zephyrus tsangkie* Oberth. A single specimen, met with nowhere else.

but a lovely *Lycænid*¹ evaded me on the trail, of which only one had been obtained. However, a Squirrel,² the recently observed species, and a Nuthatch³ was secured; though a further disappointment resulted when my 20 bore was not to hand, in sight of a pair of the Large Black Woodpecker.⁴ Odd Nutcrackers⁵ were in evidence to eye and ear, which had been long absent; and this was the penultimate occasion when it was encountered, and finally, on Mount Omei.

Aziza stayed behind to supervise the kit. Proceeding slowly through the forest, and taking little notice of the trail, an interesting Laughing-thrush⁶ fell to my gun in dense brushwood. Shortly afterwards we met our carriers on the way up; and, on reaching the hamlet of Tienta at 9,000 feet, contact was made with the carriers who had preceded us. The river flowed in a south-west direction within a deep and capacious valley, obviously emptying its waters into the Tung Ho, but our view was obstructed in that direction. Continuing along the left bank with many undulations, steadily we descended. Peach trees in fruit abounded, and a number of interesting birds were collected, which included the Scimitar Babbler⁷; Green Pigeon⁸ and Minivets were beyond shooting range, but clearly observed. Numbers of different trees and shrubs, with the yew and hazel conspicuous, denoted a change in the vegetation; by noon we had dropped to a hamlet in altitude 7,375 feet, where, after a refreshing rest with my feet in the river at a lower temperature than expected, we adjourned to the only house to escape the heat. While, to escape the flies, our lunch was partaken under a walnut tree, which suffered a diminution in its welcome crop. Crossing a lateral ravine by an adequate bridge, further stone remains of habitations, in one case occupied, were passed, where the shallow soil was little better than a river-bed, more rubble than soil. This must have been the case at some time, but now this ground was several feet above the main river that we followed

¹ *Zephyrus cælistis* Leech.

² *Sciurotamias davidanus* M.-Edw.

³ *Sitta europæa nebulosa* La Touche.

⁴ *Picus martius khamensis* (Butln.).

⁵ *Nucifraga caryocatactes macella* Thayer & Bangs.

⁶ *Garrulax lunulata* (Verr.).

⁷ *Pomatorhinus maclellandi gravivox* Dav.

⁸ Possibly *Sphenocercus sphenurus yunnanensis* La Touche.

along a precarious trail until another substantial bridge was reached when, within this cool spot, everyone, 'Jhagha' included, was thankful for this respite from the abnormal heat.

Having reached the right bank, the trail wound amongst rock and scrub. Nearing a narrow defile, with a sheer wall of crag rising above the bank we had quitted, and almost, equally abrupt to our left, the head and cape of a cock Lady Amherst Pheasant were espied, peeping over the foreground; too late for me to obtain a successful shot at its retreating form, when this occasion was the last presented of this glorious object, as if visionary, adorned so lavishly in colour. There could be little doubt the oppressive heat accounted for its occupying this shady retreat, so unexpectedly near a trail that was a mere foot wide. Scanty cultivation denoted inhabitants in the vicinity where at one point, the crags in profile, clear cut against the sky, presented a remarkable likeness to an ape. Leaving this gorge, houses appeared, with a sluice diverted from the river, amidst wooded surroundings, in trees of no pretension in size but imparting shade. Crossing again to the left bank where boulders lined the river, and once beyond the excellent bridge, passing over a stony waste, a small bridge which spanned an insignificant, lateral stream led us to the village of Kochaihopa.

Some palaver took place before we were accommodated in the R.C. Mission in charge of a native. Refreshing rain arrived next morning; crowded as the veranda was, where my stretcher had been removed from the yard, even with the minimum of shelter, it was considered preferable on my part to the inner sanctum. Everything assumed a bedraggled appearance, which was not confined to the few fowls and the shaggy-coated dog that endeavoured to share with 'Jhagha' what small pickings there were from the table. The pigs gave less trouble, penned in the yard, where puddles of water added to the depressing outlook. The more it rained, the more did 'the curious' press their attentions upon us. We were now actually in Muping; my companion was undecided whether to proceed or to return to Tachienlu, in accordance with his original intention. Meanwhile negotiations were in progress with respect to a fresh relay of carriers; the only thing to be done was to remain

cheerful, trusting that an agreement would be reached, satisfactory to all. Fortunately the weather cleared when the perpendicular crags, forested yet unscaleable, loomed to the south in all their ruggedness as seen on our entry.

Taking advantage of the bright afternoon, I obtained a dip in the river, intensely cold but exhilarating, and the Nashis did likewise; Laoyang, primus, never enamoured of water and obviously grimy, took the hint also. Apart from some Blue Whistling-thrushes,¹ evidently birds of the year, and the Brown Dipper,² obtained at last, little else was noteworthy; it was to be observed that the Red-billed Chough only circled above the rugged hills when magpies ventured round the village. Failing to procure a Squirrel,³ of which only, odd examples could ever be expected, determined me to try my luck next morning when success ensued. Netting some interesting butterflies along the banks of the stream that we had crossed on arrival, several specimens of a delicate *Pierid*,⁴ a Wood White, were obtained, and only at this locality. Receiving a call from my companion, I found him in conversation with a fresh relay of carriers, when the new terms were agreed to. After the village scales had been brought, weighing each load was again undertaken and much time seemed unnecessarily wasted. However, any attempt at expediting matters would have failed in its object; we were once again ready, Laofang picking up a portion of a load as a means to increase his wages; and, as all concerned had had a say in fixing rates, it was to be hoped, with the extra allowance, satisfaction to all would accrue. Keeping to the left bank, having departed at noon only a short march could be traversed.

Villagers from the scattered houses, where on the right bank more ground had been brought under cultivation, took an interested view of us from a distance, while verbal messages

¹ *Myiophoneus eugenei* Hume.

² *Cinclus pallasii souliei* Oust.

³ *Sciurotanias davidanus* M.-Edw.

⁴ *Leptidia amurensis* Mén. Only recorded previously from North China, the Amur, and Japan. Also *Colias hyale* L. A single specimen. *Pieris brassicæ* L. *Pieris canidia* Sparrm. *Pieris rapæ* L. *Metaporis larraldei melania* Oberth. *Rhaphicera dumicola* Oberth. *Limenitis homeyeri venata* Leech. *Araschnia prorsoides* Blanch. *Callerebia pratorum* Oberth. *Argynnis hyperbius* Johanns. *Zizeva mahe opalina* Pouj. *Everes zuthus* Leech. *Ochlodes (Augiades) subhyalina tibetana* Oberth. A single specimen.

were transmitted across the river. Much of the distorted, mountainous background was visible; it was gratifying to see a limited but well-distributed area of forest, though mostly confined to what appeared to be inaccessible pockets and the steepest flanks. Reaching a hamlet, picturesque in its approaches, the trail was lined with many fine trees, which stood like 'patriarchs', worthy of respect and safe from destruction; we dipped into a hollow where Long-tailed Tits¹ and other birds were more than ordinarily numerous, and a small ruddy coloured Babbler,² of another race, was secured, which had been obtained only once before at Yungning. Following a bend, the mountains debouched on the river, when we passed through much light tree-growth, where another specimen of the localized squirrel was obtained; when the no less valued quarry, a large dove, fell into the water and soon disappeared from sight. Maize-fields now appeared; and, at the first buildings, which proved to be the small lamasery of Trashichoten, 8,350 feet, we found accommodation with the two, kindly, old lamas of the unorthodox *bônpa*,³ or black lama creed, and the carriers went farther into the hamlet.

The veranda fronting the entrance to the *gomba* was swept clean, and preparation was made to counteract the mosquitos, which were soon apparent. The savage dog, with usual straining on the chain, resented our presence, but eventually quieted after some lumps of *tsamba*; if we had not made much progress a start had been effected which was satisfactory. We were once again on the trail next morning, and we passed through similar country, supporting more than the customary, scanty population, and through delightful scenery. At points, it was difficult to decide on the direction, as obviously only Laofang knew the route. Descending too near to the river, I crossed by a tree-trunk bridge, well above the flood-level, and I had reached a house when it was found that my steps had to be retraced. By midday we had arrived at a squalid hamlet named Shuangyeu, having crossed and recrossed the river where at the last bridge it narrowed down, and the vegetation was more than ordin-

¹ *Aegithaliscus bonvaloti* (Oust.).

² *Moupinia pæcilotis pæcilotis* (Verr.).

³ Whose Mantra is *Hom mate matsi mayôor tsa kiendoo*, and yet awaits translation.

arily matted and entwined. The headman took much interest in us, and for loquacity excelled in reminiscent chatter, mistaking Edgar for a colleague whom he had evidently met in the past, whose name he had managed to recollect. Delayed by the carriers we partook of lunch; our immediate surroundings seemed favourable, and we secured specimens of a *Yuhina*¹ that occurred in small parties.

More beautiful than ever, the trail dipped and rose through woods of great variety in tree and shrub, lavish in ferns, and with hazel-nuts, abounding. Although we were several miles higher in this valley, owing to the stiff rise from the river to our noon halt, now that we had reached the level of the river again there had been no appreciable rise of the trail. And in fact my aneroid registered a lower altitude than midday at 8,875 feet. Tongling comprised a single house, and the smallest of lamaseries in charge of a solitary lama, who however was never visible. Our carriers had not exerted themselves, and there was no warrant in so doing, if this was the last house on this side of the divide. Objecting to utilize the house when supplied with a tent was the sign for some comment, if rain should fall, which did, resulting in an increase to the total weight of my equipment, though in other directions a decrease was apparent. However one youth who made the most protest, as time elapsed he proved to be one of the most reliable helpers up to the last. Laoyang, primus, failing to clean the few, domestic utensils to Aziza's satisfaction, fell foul of 'the Kashmiri' in my absence, but such episodes had happened before. Broken ground hereabouts certainly was representative of the sub-tropical zone, so choked with vegetation were some of the fissures and hollows. It was perfectly plain we were about to enter the wild region of Muping.

The skin of a Takin,² evidently a male in yellowish-dun and golden-yellow pelage, was brought outside; and, on inquiry,

¹ *Yuhina diademata diademata* (Verr.).

Phylloscopus armandii armandii (M.-Edw.). Also obtained hereabouts for the last occasion.

² *Budorcas tibetana* Milne-Edwards. Differentiated from *B. taxicolor* Hodgson by the dorsal stripe not extending forward to the withers, black on head confined to back of ears, a ring round each eye, face in front of same, and tip of chin; whereas in *taxicolor*, the dorsal stripe extends from occiput to tail; ears, and entire face in front of them, black.

the good woman produced the horns to substantiate my identification ; but, so crudely had the skin been prepared, it was of so little value to me, no bargain was made. Disturbed rest from vermin I had avoided ; and, as tents would have to be used sooner or later, as we were about to follow the trail used by the medicinal-root collectors, our carriers would have to get accustomed to the vagaries of fortune in the weather. Crossing a bridge, overlooking a picturesque stretch of the river, we had gained the right bank when, in a short distance, dense forest was entered, through which the trail exquisitely wound. Damp underfoot with a penetrating mist did little to mar the beauty of this defile, where the trail kept the river close company. A Bullfinch,¹ never numerous, was seen ; but I was inconvenienced by the carriers, and further impeding them, so I hung back to allow them to go on ahead. An edible fungus, delicate in structure, appeared at intervals at one's feet, and brambles were ubiquitous near at hand. Reaching the left bank by a tree-trunk bridge much running water was encountered on the trail, which it was impossible to avoid. David's Tit² added a surprise, which raised my hope ; but a sunless morning could not be expected to show birds to the best advantage.

Reaching a neck in the defile, we traversed a hanging-platform of loosely laid lengths of split and unsplit branches that had to be cautiously trodden, lest a trip or slip of the foot sent one hurling into the river ; and, fortunately, ' Jhagha ' failed to make a false step. Constructed in the first instance with much ingenuity and labour, and with a view to permanence in oak supports and chiselled recesses in the rock, little in the way of repair is ever or rarely done, until with advancing time decay has taken place to render these necessary adjuncts unsafe for further use. They are then either abandoned, or where possible another alignment is undertaken. Frequently the bed of the river has been so diverted as to leave them useless for the purpose for which they were originally intended. At this point there was not much likelihood of the river diverting its course where perpendicular rocks held it to its bed. Arriving at a bifurcation in the river ; against the wish of the carriers who desired to proceed to a recog-

¹ *Pyrrhula erythaca altera* Rippon.

² *Parus davidi* (Berez. & Bianc.).

nized halting-place, as the weather had improved temporarily it was considered advisable to remain where the open dry bed would allow of tents to be pitched where no other camping site was possible.

With misgiving at our precarious situation should the river rise and change its course to this old bed, an investigation seemed to point to little danger when the former inlet was blocked with rubble and uprooted trees. Nevertheless it was contrary to sound experience. There was plenty of dead wood for fires, and we comfortably managed; while the rain again continued to descend, fortunate for us that we had halted. Rugged and sheer towered the mountains above; when a snow-capped peak, farther behind, in a north-west direction, which we had been momentarily allowed to see, must have represented a very high summit, taking into consideration our restricted view-point. What mountain this was would be idle to speculate in an unexplored country, as that we had now penetrated. We were at an altitude of 9,850 feet; and, as it was not recognized as a halting-site, the carriers had no name for this place of our choice. An improvement in the weather rapidly took place after a morning that had not been conducive to forecast. Traversing the dark density of the forest, glimpses of sunshine penetrated the gullies where fortune favoured me, when a party of that rare Titmouse¹ was again met with for the last occasion; and the male to a pair of Rosefinch,² only met with hereabouts, secured. Still it was apparent the tops of the trees had a greater attraction for leaf-haunting species.

Patches of horse-tail (*Equisetum*) grew in swampy ground, reminding me of similar localities nearer home. By midday we had reached 10,400 feet; a Laughing-thrush,³ new to the collection, having been obtained 300 feet lower. We rested on the bank of the river, converted into a lake, out of which the water churned in a seething tumult; where much brushwood and timber had been brought down the mountain-side with rock and detritus, which accounted for this obstruction, liable to burst at any moment with a further deluge of rain. Luckily for us nothing of this sort had happened

¹ *Parus davidi* (Berez. & Bianc.).

² *Procarduelis rubescens saturatior* Roths.

³ *Garrulax affinis blythii* (Verr.).

during last night, which would have meant a disaster whence there would have been no escape. Here was the reason for those rapid and unprecedented rises that now and then take place in distorted, mountainous regions, subject to heavy rainfall and landslides. Such a devastation under the foothills on the north frontier of Assam I have seen on more than one occasion, which could only be accounted for by similar obstructions. Restricted to the barest limit of rubble above the water-line, and below the bank, a search among the pebbles disclosed a number of carnivorous, ground beetles. We also procured a striking larva of a sphingid or hawk-moth, and with it the food plant, which insect however was eventually lost, having no suitable receptacle.

Reverting to the right bank, after crossing a recent landslide at a narrow portion of the river, the tree-trunk bridge was treacherously greasy; reaching an awkward turn below some boulders, dripping with moisture, a selection of an interesting, rock plant was not to be missed. Ready for our frugal meal, by noon we had reached much bamboo-covered ground, when my companion picked up a leech of which only a very few had been seen where this pest might well be expected to thrive. Rapidly rising, the trail continued over a slope that appeared to have been under cultivation at some time or other, where strawberries and raspberries for indigenous wild products were not to be disparaged in size and flavour, and we were glad of the opportunity to pick them as we proceeded. Coming upon open ground with many embedded boulders and small patches of forest, this type of country looked as if it would be eminently suitable for *takin*; but, though carefully scanned, not a sign of big game was visible. The mountainous country on our right, even more wooded, looked unassailable as, indeed, it certainly was.

Two root-collectors with their haul in baskets were preparing to remain for the night under the shelter of a rock; who, dirty in skin and ragged in attire, presented as near an approach to prehistoric man as could ever be expected to be encountered. Owing to their unwillingness or shyness to speak, and with no knowledge of their tongue, we retired without our having elicited any information. Drizzling rain began, when some distance farther on we decided in the absence of our carriers to pitch camp. Having with much

difficulty kindled a fire, the carriers arrived and wished to continue as it was not to their liking. Descending through mixed forest, after crossing a subsidiary stream, the trail sharply rose to descend again through a forest of prickly oak of fine-proportioned trees, delightful in its meandering undulations. We passed through open spaces, crowded with flowers where the blue blooms in a bed of garlic were seen for the first and last time. Another tree-trunk bridge intervened before our evening's halt; and, after a stretch of rugged ground was overcome, straggling in at intervals after a hard day of physical exertion, we had arrived at our camp at an elevation of 11,550 feet, by name, Santaochai. To find that a motley crowd of root-collectors had arrived before us and monopolized most of the limited space below the stupendous rocks, which towered sheer above.

Darkness set in to add to our difficulties before the disorder could be rectified. Devoutly desirous that the rain would hold off, never anticipating it would, fortunately it did. How Aziza managed to do any cooking, or how the boys helped me with plants and birds, hampered as we were, was one of those incidents to be ever looked back upon; all that need be said is it was done. Early on the move, many charming bits of silvan beauty were traversed, where a juvenile Thrush¹ and a Flycatcher Warbler² were obtained. Leaving the river, bordered by aquatic shrubs, after traversing much brushwood, open valleys were disclosed, typical of Tibetan borderland country.

Alpine flowers bedecked the ground in profusion where a gentian grew, not met with elsewhere; we were soon fully occupied netting the insects, which they harboured or attracted. Our midday halt, designated Lianghokow, proved to be nothing more than the remains of a house, and not much of that; where report indicated a bazaar, which had led me into a line of thought, absurdly improbable in what I might have known better, not to expect. At this place we were short of our previous 'farthest north' by some few miles. A wide valley ran north and south: to the north in the direction of Mongong, to the south indefinite, except that there was such a trail as a few natives had arrived from this direction. When

¹ *Turdus rubrocanus gouldi* (Verr.).

² *Seicercus burkii valentini* (Hart.).

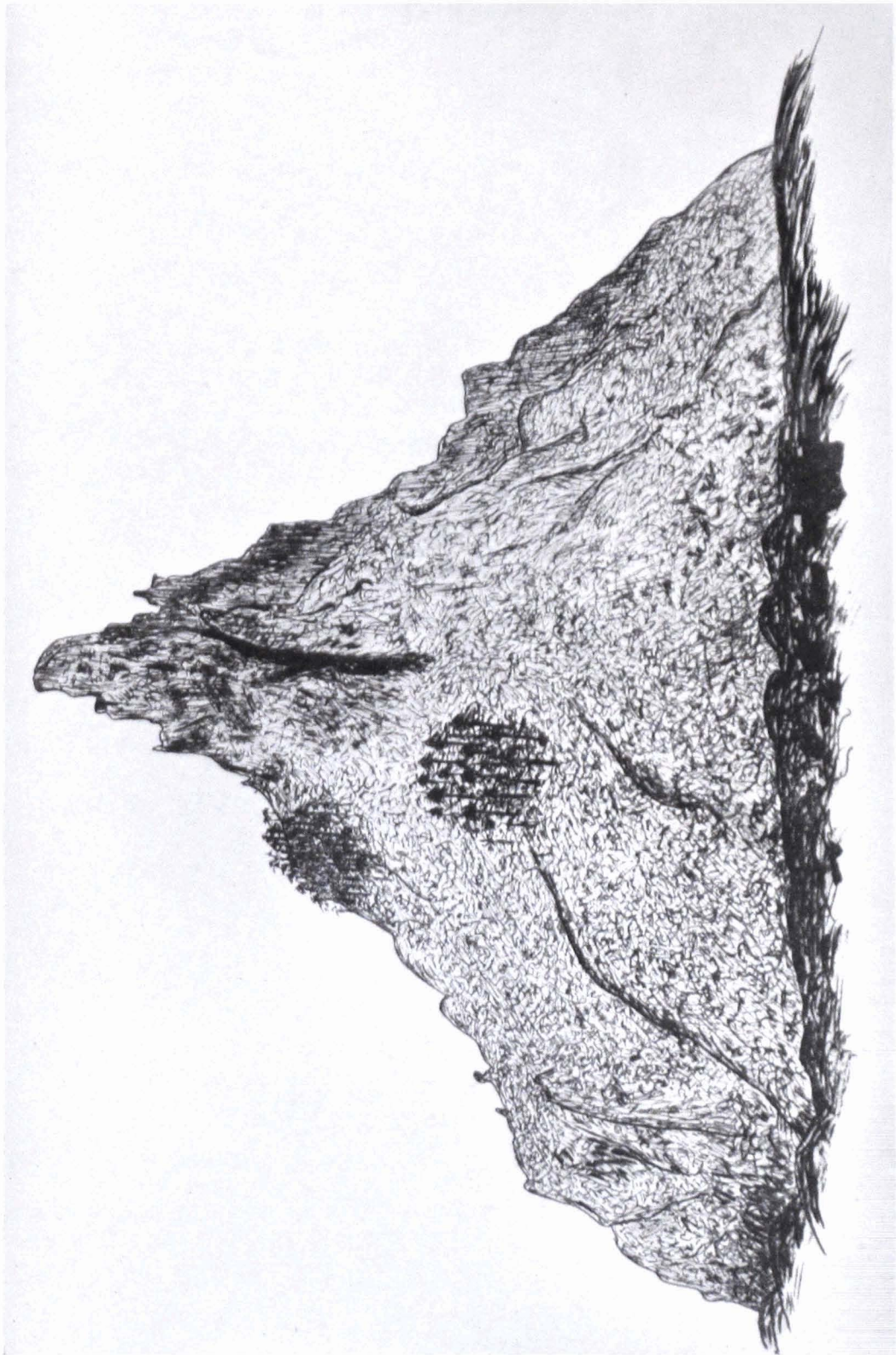
asked how far off Muping actually lay, in reply came the usual discrepancies in their estimation of what constituted a *li*, so that no reliance could be placed on any distance when it was a question of days' journeyings.

Wading the stream, we partook of the usual lunch, having been unable to augment supplies since leaving Kochaihopa. Towering like a cathedral spire, a pinnacle of rock was prominent some 1,000 feet above the level of the trough at 12,200 feet. Of variety so infinite in contour and mould, the mountains always evoked surprise and comment. Ascending the shelving slope that faced south, there was little sign of a trail. After crossing the same stream, now a mere brook, still gradually ascending through an alpine, flower-carpeted moorland, we met relays of root-collectors, and we arrived at the summit of the pass at 13,100 feet; where, for the second occasion, the stately *Eremurus*¹ reared its tall length of single, flower-adorned stamens. Few only, however, were among the boulders; as if so marvellous a creation of dignity ever was intended to be displayed for the vulgar gaze, and only once before had it occurred in a similar, remote habitat. Drizzling rain, after a spell of brilliant sunshine, and with it mist, blocked out much of the view as we abruptly descended, boulder by boulder, in a southward direction when for the most of the day we had been going east. With the exception of a Bullfinch,² seen once again in forest, nothing else was worthy of note. We were now within another valley, drained by a river on our left, and flowing in the same direction we were proceeding.

With little prospect of finding a requisite camping site, rather than miss our chance we remained under shelter of a lean-to of boughs and sapling supports, erected by root-collectors, but vacant, awaiting fresh occupants. In wretched conditions our carriers filtered in, and preparations were undertaken to pitch tents. Though the ground was much overgrown with rank secondary-brush, it was so fouled, difficulty was experienced in selecting a site on the level ground of limited extent. Fortunately the mist cleared next morning and with promise of sunshine we continued, following many ups and downs and across recent landslides. Gaining

¹ *Eremurus robustus*.

² *Pyrrhula erythaca altera* Rippon.



"TOWERING LIKE A CATHEDRAL SPIRE, A PINNACLE OF ROCK . . ."

the left bank of the torrent in traversing a rocky declivity where sandals and stockings gave a more secure foothold than boots, 'Jhagha', hungry and weary but stoical, missed her footing, and forthwith she was within the grip of the surging water. How she escaped drowning was a miracle. Regaining the opposite bank, it looked as if only a miracle could get her back again, not anticipating that we should have to cross again ourselves before reaching our next halt. In the meantime a tree was dropped over the torrent, and 'Jhagha', extra cautious, made a creditable crossing on the barest essential. Slipping without warning as my legs went from under me I came down myself later, if under less drastic but similar dramatic circumstances.

We rested at noon in a favourite resort which was comprised of a solitary house and a hut, a few paces aside. These habitations were the first seen for three and a half days. Aziza managed to purchase a fowl and tents were spread out to dry. Before leaving the poor woman brought her children forward to kowtow when dire poverty, so flagrant, was requited in the gratitude shown. The Brown Dipper¹ had been observed as high as 9,500 feet; at 8,000 feet, a black Swallow-tail² with a patch of golden-green lustre on the hind wings was caught as it settled on the pebbly, moist bed of a stream, to be frequently seen later at lower limits, but seldom netted. On leaving, some scrub produced a Laughing-thrush where signs of birds were more frequent than in the sunless stretches of this defile. Traversing a narrow and awkward bank, apparent to one's sense of smell, and soon to sight as a swarm of flies rose, lay the corpse of some poor mortal, fallen, without a friend, left to die and rot where he fell!

Now that we had arrived at the first cluster of habitations, my companion preferred to occupy what quarters were available to evade the seldom absent bugbear; no other evident site, my camp was pitched in the river-bed, opposite Tupakö, a hamlet comprised of about half a dozen houses. I had

¹ *Cinclus pallasii souliei* Oust.

² *Papilio bianor sifanius* Oberth. Other butterflies obtained August 28 included: *Lethe violaceopicta* Pouj., one specimen, obtained nowhere else. *Zophoessa helle* Leech. Five specimens. Obtained nowhere else. *Zophoessa procne* Leech. Ten specimens. *Everes argiades helliotia* Mén. Previously only obtained at Baurong on May 6, but later met with on other seven occasions.

seen the upper reaches, so I trusted that no alteration of the river's course would occur during my stay. Having dropped 3,600 feet since morning, and 1,000 feet since midday, we were at an altitude of 7,400 feet. By this time the reason Muping had remained so long a *terra incognita* was too obvious. Disappointed so far from a zoological standpoint, apart from the customary paucity of animal-life, which is to be expected in sunless, forested defiles, I had expectation of better results from a reasonable sojourn. Red and black currants of a size comparable with the highly cultivated products of Europe claimed notice, when it was the work of a few moments to reach the juicy, pendulous berries, swinging within grasp; and, if lacking in flavour, they were certainly not devoid of all taste, but for some unaccountable reason, avoided by passers-by; while a tart, pink berry, growing in clusters on a thorny tree, never failed to attract when a branch would be torn off at random.

The Red-billed Magpie¹ occurred at regular hours above the steep, declivitous rocks, crowded with vegetation, overlooking the torrent but out of reach. It was last seen south of the Szechwan frontier, with the exception of an unauthentic record from Baurong, whence a clutch of hard-set eggs was obtained, when the bringer could help me no further with information than anticipated. The Ferruginous Flycatcher,² not previously encountered, and the Grey-headed Flycatcher,³ had young well on the wing, where during favourable moments they flitted about the leafy boughs of the trees, mostly walnut, which surrounded the village. The presence of the Grey Wagtail⁴ pointed to this species breeding in the vicinity, as it was the case at other localities at higher limits. The Hoopoe⁵ arrived on September 1, somewhat shy where cleared ground was wanting. Occasionally Minivets⁶ in twos and threes enlivened the topmost foliage, but they never stayed for any length of time. The Cinnamon Sparrow⁷ was in possession,

¹ *Urocissa erythrorhyncha erythrorhyncha* (Bodd.).

² *Hemichelidon cinereiceps* Hodgs.

³ *Culicicapa ceylonensis calochrysea* Oberh.

⁴ *Motacilla cinerea caspica* (Gmel.).

⁵ *Upupa epops saturata* Lönk.

⁶ *Pericrocotus brevirostris ethologus* B. & P.

⁷ *Passer rutilans rutilans* (Temm.).

but the Common Tree Sparrow¹ was absent. A Flycatcher Warbler² among a few bush-haunting species summed up the most noteworthy of the birds, where a scarcity still prevailed.

For the first few days, if the mornings were cloudy the afternoons generally came out fine, but steady, light rain soon fell; and while the head of the village, who was a widow, assured us they would secure a Giant Panda, some time elapsed before finalities had been concluded; when every mongrel which could be produced left with a shikari, her eldest son, and his escort, amid a send-off of clanging cymbals and tom-tomming of drums. Some welcome toads and specimens of a poisonous snake were of interest. With the mist and steady drizzle enveloping this defile, at dusk my acetylene lamp was nightly lit, when moths in number came on to the white muslin, encircling the light; it became a question of emptying bottles, laden with my captures, till the small hours of the morning, when before breakfast the majority had been safely papered.

Honey seemingly in plenty, but little else! So poor were these people that, if occasionally a few cobs of maize were presented, little or nothing would they sell. Sparing of gun-powder, a single shot rang out every night, additional to shouts as they zealously guarded their crops from the inroad of wild animals. 'Jhagha', also, enlivened the night by running up and down the river-bank, barking at some four-footed marauder that, could it have crossed, would have made a quick end to this annoyance. The subsidiary bed showed indications of the rise and fall of the water, but nothing untoward happened to cause anxiety. Root-collectors passed up and down; but we were now entirely dependent on whoever would come forward when the time came to depart, having paid off all our carriers but two who had considerably remained, and a better two could not be desired. In the throes of death, a doomed mortal arrived on an improvised stretcher. My remedy for dysentery was promptly administered, and a further instalment of 'tabloids' handed to his guardians, but—too late—death intervened the same night.

¹ *Passer montanus obscuratus* Jac.

² *Seicercus burkii valentini* (Hart.).

Snow capped, the mountains to the north appeared on the morning of September 6; as the villagers returned some few days later, having had no success as foreseen, though my companion was just as sanguine as I was sceptical, without any tangible result in tracking the Giant Panda,¹ a shortage of food for everyone was in store, Laoyang, secundus, having foraged down the valley with little or no success. Aziza, ill with debility and unable to rise, two of my Nashi boys paid off to avoid further complications, and everyone feeling the strain, decided me to remain no longer than inevitable. Apart from a Stoat,² and a Squirrel³ obviously darker in colour than the form that occurred on the west of the watershed, small mammals were even scarcer than birds. Our guide, Laofang, having secured all that he could expect to receive and fallen foul of Laoyang, secundus, with whom he had on one occasion come to blows, deserted with my discontented Nashis, who latterly had spent their time bemoaning their lot, and showing resentment under the stress of circumstances—it little mattered that my companion and I were in the same, if not worse, straits. The whisked egg, mixed with flour and baked, that used to appear with consistent regularity when, without anticipation, the 'Aziza' custard pudding was a foregone conclusion, some time since it had disappeared from our menu. In such a position, following my example, when the best antidote to hunger is tobacco, my companion soon adapted himself to a bamboo cigarette-holder, and he rolled the local leaf which, with the aid of country paper, used for botanical or entomological specimens, manufactured from a vegetable product, probably the ubiquitous bamboo, answered the purpose admirably. Hard as we were pressed, 'Jhagha' shared what little there was with me, but ill at ease spent much time wandering to and from the village. And

¹ Protected as this rare 'survival' is by the characteristic features of this habitat, which for distorted and inaccessible terrain can seldom be equalled, nevertheless, a census of its numbers is desirable, but of far greater importance is the imperative need for a Sanctuary. What could be better than Muping, which after all is only sparsely inhabited and limited in extent?

If this plea should act as a stimulus to those with like sympathies before it is too late to save *Ailuropoda melanoleuca* from extinction, it will have served its purpose. Should it be ever so pious a hope with only the remotest chance of materialization.

² *Mustela sibirica moupinensis* M.-Edw.

³ *Sciurotamias davidanus consobrinus* M.-Edw.

woe betide anyone who ventured near the camp, so savage had she become with strangers who, she considered, had no right to approach.

Sold into bondage in lieu of a debt, the heartrending story of a mother was established, when an infant girl, a mere child, was frequently to be seen destitute of clothing; but we were powerless to assist or rectify this deplorable custom. Two of our carriers had worked for their food (whatever that amounted to) in the maize crops; while rates for carrying had increased at every stage, bewildering in fluctuation of the currency, I might have sufficient coin to get as far as Muping, even if depleted by an unexpected drain on my resources, caused through my Nashis' behaviour. Eventually, a scrap lot of carriers arrived, comprised of all and sundry. One or two refusals taking place, still short, which caused further delay; with the picking up of the final load our camp was struck after a sojourn of thirteen nights.

Leaving behind the rat of a dog, full of mettle nevertheless, which had followed Ming-sän from the house to the north, to root among the débris, to my sincere regret; impossible as it was to look after every waif and stray; with the tunes ringing in my ears that now had in perpetual repetition racked my mind when only was I free from this torment during the brief hours of sleep, we were once more under way; and a realistic demonstration had been my lot in the reason for my companion's dread of running water or Tennyson's brook that does go on for ever. At the same time, if the refrains were stirring strains of conquest, I had yet to hear and vanquish the necessity for Kermit Roosevelt's public announcement: "that he feared the next Expedition would have had to be a Relief Expedition, had I not put in an appearance." Fortunately Aziza made the requisite effort in preference to the dreaded bier, when the situation was already sufficiently acute with a shortage of carriers; but, taking

The following butterflies were obtained at this camp, Aug. 28-Sept. 9: *Pieris melete* Men. *Pieris extensa* Pouj. One specimen September 2, *Pieris rapæ* L. *Terias hecabe* L. *Colias hyale poliographus* Motsch. *Erebia herse* Gr.-Grsh. One specimen, met with nowhere else. *Pyrameis indica* Hbst. *Melitæa sundara jézabel* Oberth. A solitary specimen, which was plentiful at higher altitudes. *Argynnis hyperbius* Johanns. *Heliophorus (Ilerda) saphir* Blanch. *Papilio bianor sifanius* Oberth.

time, at less than our accustomed pace, he soon showed his wonted cheerfulness.

Traversing several landslides on a descent to the river, where the trail had once been and now was deep water under rocks, these obstructions were satisfactorily overcome. Needlessly, afterwards, I took in my stride an abandoned platform, almost too risky a performance to be pleasant, when 'Jhagha' had faithfully followed; but she disappeared into the forest when recalled. A fire was lit on the trail where we rested, when arrowroot was mixed with a soup tablet to economize, as for some time we had rationed all available food down to a specified number of biscuits per meal. So far, this defile had shown little difference from its appearance, higher. Passing over boulders and detritus, lying at the foot of an overhanging crag, it was not expedient to loiter in a quarter where, at any moment, another accumulation was liable to be precipitated; shortly an inflowing tributary appeared from the west. Crossing the main stream, a small black snake, mutilated but useful, was picked up. Nearing the scattered hamlet of Louyinkö, 6,525 feet, the valley narrowed, with the mountains abruptly rising ahead, forbidding in aspect, giving rise to brief cogitation, how would it ever be possible to find a way through.

My companion retired to a house farther away from the surging water, where there could not be more than two or three. When the carriers arrived at the solitary house hard by the trail, fortunately there was sufficient room to pitch my tent on the bare essential of ground, though the ropes had to be fixed to any and every post and fence, forcing others to crouch, obstructing the one and only 'right of way'. As expected, skirting the rocks, on the following day we passed through most difficult country; at one point we had to scale the abrupt rocks to avoid entering the river, with an equally declivitous descent, and the usual number of hanging-platforms. Having come through this canyon, where the Little Forktail¹ was seen at 5,600 feet, by midday we had arrived at another solitary house with its patch of cultivated ground where we had lunch; a few butterflies² were netted, which included a newly emerged specimen of a leaf-

¹ *Microcichla scouleri* (Vig.).

² *Colias hyale poliographus* Motsch.

butterfly¹ at an altitude of 5,200 feet. Our time would come ; but, owing to a congestion with on-coming and out-going root-collectors, a long delay occurred at the single, level rope-ferry, where feet almost touched the seething and swirling water, which was of short duration and caused some amusement. Not to ' Jhagha ', however, for the first time in her life enclosed in a crate, and doing her best to force an exit. Soon to regard it as the inevitable, but relieved when it was all over ; she would have anticipated the event at a critical moment, had she had her own way, for which there would have been no succour. Begonias, on rocks dripping with moisture, were of more frequency where ferns grew in a riot of species.

We remained on the right bank for the rest of this day, and by evening we had arrived at the village of Pashkü, 5,425 feet, where my tent was pitched on an excellent piece of *pucca*, on the site of a former house, which was easily swept. Embellished with artistic designs only in need of the essential repairs, a large house stood opposite, which was utilized by everyone else. Judging by the number of moths on the wing at this particular time of the year, and under similar, favourable conditions, a sojourn would have been well rewarded. Birds also appeared next morning more numerous, where the presence of the Dark-grey Bush Chat,² and the Golden Oriole³ in a single pair, ratified the low altitude to which we had descended. A short distance below this village, after crossing by the bridge that spanned the river, which came in on our right, further hanging-platforms were encountered, when a rise ensued, followed by just as abrupt a drop, to rise again, passing scattered houses and cultivation. Arriving at a single house, an on-coming traveller was recognized as one of our Kochiahopa carriers, and friendly greeting took place with his two comrades who had proved so reliable. We were now at an altitude of 5,200 feet, and, keeping well above the river, the trail undulated through sparse cultivation, with much brush-wood. The crêpe myrtle trees,⁴ first seen in a galaxy of bloom within the compound of the temple at Likiang, were now at their zenith and prominent in the landscape, where

¹ *Kallima inachis sinensis* Swinh.

² *Rhodophila (Oreicola) ferrea haringtoni* (Hart.).

³ *Oriolus chinensis indicus* Jerd.

⁴ *Lagerstrœmia indica*.

little forest was apparent except on the farthest declivities. Requesting a few sprays, after admiring the deep carmine-red blooms, the owner graciously and promptly acceded to my request by climbing out on the branches that were beyond our reach.

The first cluster of houses, closely packed together, appeared in sight on the level ground, contiguous to the left bank of the river, but considerably below; this must have represented a place of some importance. Waterfalls became more numerous; in the distance an excellent example of a lateral gorge of uniform narrowness, accounted by sub-glacial torrent action, would compare favourably with similar phenomena in Switzerland. We were about to obtain information of the other members of the Expedition who had worked in this valley; and on passing a house, more commodious than usual, it was said that one or more of them had utilized it as a base-camp. Still descending, we arrived at a chain-bridge, and we crossed a large stream that flowed into the main defile from the west; while subsidiary, lesser streams appeared beyond the village of densely packed houses, which we missed, being off our route. 'Jhagha' was heroically bearing up with the change in temperature, but she had required constant attention, though generally she was well ahead. Leaving a small village, which had the appearance of newness, a long stretch of bare and uninteresting country intervened before our arrival at Moahten, 4,375 feet. Here my tent was pitched outside, a few yards from the river, which was flowing in a fast current, and no longer impeded with boulders or rapids. The Whistling-Thrush frequented its banks; but, apart from a pair of Kestrels, which hovered above, and a Nightjar¹ that was secured, the surroundings were not prolific in birds, though the Red-billed Magpie was to be seen next morning amongst the vegetation behind the hamlet.

The tame features of the landscape proved to have no bearing on subsequent aspects of the country. After crossing during rain very similar slopes, by noon we had arrived at

¹ *Caprimulgus indicus jota* Temm. & Schleg.

The following butterflies were collected on September 12: *Araschnia proroides* Blanch. *Euthalia kardama* Moore. *Pseudergolis wedah* Koll. *Argynnis hyperbius* Johanns. *Argynnis sagana* Dbl. Hew. Obtained for the second occasion. *Everes argiades hellotia* Mén. *Lycænopsis (Cyaniris) argiolus* L. *Parnara bevani thyone* Leech.

the iron chain-bridge that spans the main river. An unusually long street of a small town was entered, more squalid with recent downpours, if that could be the case, where pigs wallowed in the puddles. When every occupant seemingly had time to spare, and prominent in the doorways were many women; but even those busy of either sex lifted their gaze at our mixed retinue and ourselves. What a nondescript lot we must have looked! Entering a gorge where the mountains were in bold relief, the Ibisbill¹ was to be seen in the bed of the river, which had changed its course from time to time, as witnessed by the old alignments of the trail. We then skirted the rocks, over which a Wall Creeper² flitted like a butterfly in rose-pink and grey, pecking with its long bill the crevices and rough surface of their declivities. Cut in the face of rock, towering in magnitude, a marvellous work of excavation so remotely accomplished, the trail descended to a river which flowed from the east in almost equal volume to our rumbling traveller of the past eighteen days; and, crossing by another chain-bridge, after a level stretch we had arrived in Muping.

Had this town been the El Dorado of my quest, the reality would soon have disillusioned me by the plague of flies in its squalid street; monopolized by a throng when on arrival at our quarters, the Mission House, a curious crowd would have denied me space to breathe. Pigs, dogs, and children, everywhere, over all pervaded the smells, redolent of the Land of the Mandarin. Not very pleased at our intrusion, the woman in charge cleared away the cereals in process of drying, where on an upper floor we were free from further inspection; though Aziza, working under difficulties, came in for renewed attention on the same level as the intruding crowd.

Every precaution had been taken in Tachienlu to carry sufficient money, as it could best be estimated, but no-one could foresee or cater for local prejudice affecting a coinage, embracing the tael, dollar (both Mexican and American trade),

¹ *Ibidorhyncha struthersii* Vig.

² *Tichodroma muraria* (L.)

The following butterflies were collected on September 13: *Polyommatus bæticus* L. *Everes argiades hellotia* Mén. *Lycænopsis* (*Cyaniris*) *oreas* Leech. *Lycænopsis* (*Cyaniris*) *dilecta* Moore. *Satarupa sinica sinica* Feld. *Daimio tethys moorei* Mab.

with the more current coin, approximately equivalent to half the value of the Indian rupee, having a different cash value in each province or even district; transporting copper cash, the only official coinage, was out of the question, so that, instead of losing on the swings and recouping on the roundabouts, it was more often the case of transport rates increasing with a depreciated exchange. The boys would benefit, however, by the exchange in Tachienlu, where Szechwan silver was at a premium in comparison with Yunnan silver. No good Kashmiri ever undertakes a journey solely for the benefit of his health, so Aziza, no exception, had also turned sad at heart, perturbed at the trend of the money market, as this meant considerable loss on his 'nest-egg' when, strictly speaking, this represented less for his master's necessities. (Most of them do it as a matter of course—some are more accomplished than others—'except' that 'Best boy in Asia', in whom master will admit no wrong—and not in Asia alone—until an obsession of make-believe with a misplaced confidence ends in abrupt enlightenment when—too late!) Fortunately, after paying off the carriers, although almost depleted of funds, the residue sufficed. There was no means of securing a loan in this outlandish place: how could it be expected when travel was no sinecure, with no guarantee for its safe return.

Once in touch with the Protestant missions funds were always available, thanks to my companions ahead, who had with forethought and preciseness made all arrangements for me. And also I cannot speak too highly of my missionary friends, who lightened my task by rendering me every assistance, whenever approached. Money in coin had, perforce, to be carried; nevertheless involving a risk that had worked out very well in practice, all things considered, when estimating my requirement for long journeys of indefinite duration.

Refreshed by a long-overdue, hot bath, while Aziza commenced operations on the unleavened *chupati*, though the much-maligned rooster and egg seemed as scarce and difficult to procure as before, still we managed; and, barring unforeseen delays, it was only a matter of days when we should be quit of the mountains. Deputing Ming-sän as embassy, our cards were presented to the magistrate, and a reply quickly came in the affirmative. Passing along the straggling thorough-

fare, a few Crow-tits,¹ hung outside in cramped, square cages, were vivacious and healthy, if captive; while a Jay,² unaccustomed to a foreigner's presence, was more easily startled. In early days, what would I have given to be its proud possessor, in a wicker cage as well, should it actually be made of bamboo! Neither have I ever forgotten the joy as a small schoolboy when greeted by the yellow H.C. card affixed to the cage of my Himalayan rabbit, 'Nell', to see later in *Fur and Feather* the complimentary: "too young yet, very promising youngster", so eager to deposit a treasured charge that I had tramped with my basket to the show in a West Riding valley, the night before—visions of long ago in remote China! Crowding against the bars were 'birds' not caged for show, but representatives of a different class; though one poor wretch pleaded our supplication on his behalf, if the truth were known, he had most likely come by his deserts; but interference without knowledge of the facts would have been presumption on our part.

Graciously received by the magistrate, during a requisite interview he considered it imperative that we should have an escort, and rates for the carriers had been stated, not to be exceeded. No sooner had we returned to our quarters when the intimation was presented, in proof that the magistrate was returning our call, post-haste—a complimentary procedure. Dreary in outlook, the town assumed a woebegone look as the rain steadily fell, not deterring me, however, from viewing the local objects of interest, among which was an isolated, sandstone memorial, prominent in its dexterous carvings of historical events. And never was there more need of a Society for the Preservation of China's Ancient Monuments!

Three days after our arrival carriers appeared, when some discussion took place by way of preliminaries; but happily there was an authority to appeal to, if necessary. Managing to satisfy initial demands, we left, escorted by a youthful guard of four regulars; now, for the second occasion profiting by this safeguard. Relieved to be free from the squalor, coincidentally the native missionary considered it a good opportunity to

¹ *Suthora alphonsiana alphonsiana* Verr.

² *Garrulus glandarius sinensis* Swinh.

take advantage of our company for a change to fresh ' fields of labour '.

Following the river for about a mile, a hanging-platform barely allowed room to pass, meeting an on-coming party of villagers; when a bridge, reported down, we struck up the hill-face along an improvised trail, slippery with recent rain, which the carriers found difficulty in overcoming. Similarly, portions of newly-cut ground, representing a fresh alignment for a trail, with no attempt at continuity, saw us wallowing in the sticky, red soil. After lunch at a wayside house, nearing a patch of light forest, the Red-billed Liiothrix¹ or Peking Robin appeared with a Shrike Babbler,² which were obtained at an elevation of 4,500 feet; and beyond a rare, weak-flying, Eastern-Himalayan butterfly³ occurred, not taken previously. After a gradual descent, a steep drop ensued, where a party of Crow-tits⁴ was obtrusive among tall reeds; the Hill Warbler⁵ had been once again located and obtained. Prominent along the river that was now visible were the Heron⁶ and Cormorant⁷ and Kingfisher;⁸ the Yellow-vented Bulbul⁹ was once more to be seen. *Abisara*¹⁰ and *Zemerus*¹¹ were represented among butterflies,¹² but nothing uncommonly striking. Villages soon appeared, when Aziza was able to replenish a few supplies. Odd examples of the Chinese Jay in a similar receptacle as earlier noted, showed in what esteem it was regarded as a cage-bird; reaching the river-bank once more, an angler with rod and reel, simply equipped but effective in capable hands, parted with his solitary capture. When after crossing the ricefields we entered the small town of Linguang, 3,300 feet, where in an upper room of the

¹ *Leiothrix lutea lutea* (Scop.).

² *Pteruthius xanthochloris pallidus* (Dav.). Two specimens previously obtained at Muli on April 2.

³ *Stiboges nymphidia* Btlr.

⁴ *Suthora alphonsiana alphonsiana* Verr.

⁵ *Suya crinigera catharia* (Reich.).

⁶ *Ardea cinerea jouyi* Clark.

⁷ *Phalacrocorax carbo sinensis* (Shaw & Nodder).

⁸ *Alcedo atthis bengalensis* Gmel.

⁹ Possibly *Pycnonotus aurigaster andersoni* (Swinh.).

¹⁰ *Abisara fylla* Dbl.

¹¹ *Zemerus flegyas* Cr.

¹² *Ypthima baldus* Fab. *Rhaphicera dumicola* Oberth. *Argynnis childreni caesarea* Fruhbst. *Argynnis hyperbius* Johanns. *Papilio protenor* Cr.

C.I. Mission we found respite from the curious mob. Having got rid of the usual litter and residue of rice-straw when every upper floor in this time of need is utilized for drying cereals, we were glad to discard wet clothes.

The escort, not free to proceed, were paid off at an enhanced rate, so that all might be satisfied. For some reason or other, next morning a rumour was current, in a great measure owing to glib tongues the night before on the part of our carriers, and overheard by my companion, that an escort would be no longer available, notwithstanding we held an order from a higher authority. On inquiry, the local official was only too pleased to furnish us with a relief of young soldiers, fortunately so, if now about to enter the supposedly worst, bandit-infested district. Delayed next morning with the preparation of specimens, we were, however, ahead of our carriers who had entered an eating-house after adjusting their loads, when they might well have partaken of food at the same time as ourselves. Once outside the town, we turned sharply to the left, continuing up the bed of a stream, with many houses surrounded by bamboo-clumps in sight on the hillsides. As I was in front the activities of our escort were not visible, but my companion informed me they carried out their duties to the extent that they demanded whoever were in the neighbouring houses to come out and show themselves. While it struck me as lamentable that there should be any occasion for an armed guard in this particular stretch of country. Arriving at the summit in altitude 4,500 feet, the escort, who had been certainly helpful, were paid off and expressed their gratitude on departure. By midday we had dropped 500 feet; after our usual snack, a number of butterflies¹ were obtained, including *Heliophorus*,² but *Junonia orithya* evaded capture, where these insects were of more interest than usual. Villages became more frequent; and, with the sunshine and warmth, the country had an aspect of peacefulness in its huge revolving waterwheels and lush plots of rice cultivation, which was probably far from being the case.

¹ *Polygonium c-album* L. Obtained for the second occasion. *Arachnia doris* Leech. Two specimens, met with nowhere else. *Polyommaticus boeticus* L. *Baoris (Parnara) guttatus* Brem. Two specimens. Also the humble-bee moth *Macroglossum bombylans* Bsd.

² *Heliophorus saphir* Blanch.

Depleting another disciple of the angler's art of his two fish, a further, small town, typical of China in its concave and convex tile-roof, buildings, was reached at the meeting of two rivers where, having come to a halt, proof of identification was demanded by some official behind the scene. Isolated, contiguous to the rivers as these places are, it was no surprise to find many were the ups and downs and turns which led to or out of these mountain-locked, populated towns. However we had a level stretch for a short distance; and, turning to the left, we entered a deep gorge of distinct beauty, decidedly cool in its sunless depth, and the rocks dripping with water, where ferns and moss revelled in a riot of greenery. This portion of the day's journey occupied much time, and it was rough going for the carriers. So, having crossed the torrent by a natural, stone arch where a deep, subterranean flow was apparent, and the carriers not yet in sight, I suggested we should pitch camp at a dilapidated temple below the exit to the gorge. It was just as well that my companion objected on the grounds that we were still within sound of running water, as we were later to learn that this haunt was a favourite rendezvous of bandits.

Resembling effigies or waxworks, with the one difference that the exhibits were composed of straw and clay, showing wear and tear with the ravages of time, mouths smeared with opium where in favour or with an arm or hand deficient if in disfavour, according to the supplicant's entreaties having produced, according to belief, a good or no response. These arrays of diverse figures in brilliant colours were grotesque; and, in cases, rabelaisian in portrayal. Such a temple was only one of a number, similar in its mute inmates, passed since leaving Muping, and open to wayfarers, entirely neglected in so far as attentive care. An expansive view lay ahead; while the scenery, as might be expected with the stupendous chasm through which we had come, entrancing and pleasing. The last of the wayfarers travelling in a party had hurried past us on the trail. Having decided to proceed, water sluices portended cultivation. On coming in contact with the ricefields, a pair of White-necked Crows¹ was a further and a sure sign that we were leaving the mountains; when, if somewhat premature, Aziza appropriately

¹ The Collared Crow, *Corvus torquatus* Less.

remarked that we could surely now salaam the guardians of this inhospitable region.

Arriving at a miserable hamlet, by name Renjaba, we were at an elevation of only 2,900 feet ; when, looking for a camping site with none, available, this forced me to accept the conveniences offered by one of the villagers in a room abutting on the street. My companion was found in conversation with the owner, who appeared to be a man of some substance, athletic of build, gifted with a ready tongue, and evidently he had travelled, at least as far as Singapore and Calcutta. Credited, as later it proved, with being the head of the local bandits, there appeared to be a game of hide-and-peek taking place, as regular troops had left this abode in the morning. Anticipating danger, the boys were requested to sleep by the door, when my companion improvised a bed upon the table. Long before daylight, an infernal noise outside indicated a commotion of some consequence ; and, as it was, the bandits had returned trusting to catch the soldiers napping ; when, having given us a guarantee of safety, our host was as good as his word. What had become of him when daylight appeared was just as much an enigma as the dispersal of his gang. In an explosion of anger, a woman's tongue was let loose from the back premises within view railing at her overawed and submissive husband. So excited and highly-strung, the pitch of her voice had been raised ; any subsequent unpleasantness that might result to which such incidents often lead, thankful we were when our carriers took up their loads.

Level, depressingly so, we had reached the plains, at all events temporarily ; while the villagers were busy in the fields, little rice had been cut. Dragonflies darted to and fro, glittering in the sunshine, which had become exhausting ; a butterfly with silvery underside, the Sunbeam,¹ evaded me through my inertia, where many Grass Yellows² and several Pansies³ rested with open wings on the trail.

A walled city, Lushan, now came into view ; passing beneath its battlements we entered by the ponderous arch, when congested streets denoted the seething mass of its humanity. Turning down a by-street we avoided a funeral

¹ *Curetis acuta* Moore.

² *Terias hecabe* L. *Terias hecabe mandarina* Orza.

³ *Junonia iphita* Cr. *Junonia almana* L. *Junonia orithya* L.

of a soldier, recently shot by bandits, whence the Mission House was gained, which was vacated after a brief stay.

Strange as it may seem, with the exception of a river, dotted in a straight line, north and south, nothing further is marked between Lingquang and Yachou, which is a blank on the maps; notwithstanding these places of importance exist, to and from which places, however, all produce must be transported by human labour. And whereas Lianghokow is correctly marked, it is given an equal status with Muping. If any further reasons were needed for this lack of knowledge, the only inference that can be drawn is the peril of travel; and the district of Muping is, I am informed, now in the throes of civil war.¹

Edgar indented on the itinerant vendor's stock of the *maulitzu*,² a fruit in local request; Ming-sän and Aziza made purchases of ground-nuts,³ which kept us going on the march. Leaving the city by the chain-bridge—too uncomfortable in its swaying vibrations to be pleasant—a historical arch, lavish in decoration, stood as a monument to China's widows who refrain from second marriage; out of which a large bat emerged into the light of day, apparently not inconvenienced at this hour of the morning, at which I hesitated to shoot, much as it was wanted, lest local sensibility might think damage was intended to this object of noble art. By midday we had arrived at a wayside halt, when during lunch an ominous roar, emanating from the barren scree in view, instantaneously resulted in an avalanche, when tons of rock and soil bounded in one fell swoop, crashing in a cloud of dust some hundreds of feet, below. It was not until we had reached Feih sien, 2,600 feet, having risen and descended, crossed lateral streams, however always bridge-spanned, where we commandeered the temple, littered with ground-nut shells, which soon was swept. Never having seen a canary, Ming-sän had questioned me concerning these caged birds when encountered in a picturesquely situated village, perched on a hill, over which the narrow thoroughfare sharply rose and fell. Interrogation and inspection accounted for a crowd, which dispersed and eventually left us in peace,

¹ *In litt.* March 11, 1930.

² *Actinidia chinensis*.

³ *Arachis hypogæa*. The oil from the seeds is used in place of olive oil.

though my companion had retired to the sanctity of a room within the small town itself.

Split into halves from snout to tail, and scraped to a respectable whiteness, innumerable porkers were on sale, in substantiation of him who pays the rent, and this gentleman's popularity. Strings of flattened, mummified ducks denoted another favourite with the numerous purchasers. Ascending, we skirted the sandstone rocks, hollowed out into a trail, overlooking a remarkable canyon of a subsidiary river which flows into the Ya; and leaving its left bank we descended through rudely cultivated and lank 'tea'—never to produce 'a flush' without assistance from digging fork and pruning-knife—when, sighting the ferry-boat, crammed with its human freight about to leave, those of us who were in the nick of time took a passage, landing down river. Patches of ground-nut cultivation were thronged with villagers, fertilizing the ground with the mephitic liquid and grubbing the crop, where parties of the Eastern Rook¹ were similarly occupied at an equally beneficial task, now for the first time encountered. After a stretch of two to three miles level going we had reached our destination, Yachou, when the asphalt street looked unusually tidy with some approach to sanitation, which was after a lapse of thirty-four days.

The following butterflies were obtained on September 18: *Pieris melete* Mén. *Neptis hylas oda* Fruhst. *Neptis mahendra extensa* Leech. *Junonia iphita* Cr. *Junonia almana* L. *Lethe syrcis* Hew. Two specimens. *Diagora subviridis chinensis* Leech. A single specimen. *Papilio machaon sikkimensis* Moore. A single female, but taken on September 19 at as low an altitude as 2,575 feet. *Papilio xuthus* L. Two females. *Papilio protenor* Cr. Two specimens. *Papilio bianor sifanius* Oberth. Two female specimens obtained on September 19. *Papilio sarpedon* L. With the variety *semifasciatus* Honr. Both of which were obtained in the same locality. *Taraka hamada* Druce. In bamboos. *Halpe nephele* Leech. September 19. *Everes argiades helliotia* Mén. *Everes filicaudis* Pryer. A single specimen obtained on September 19.

¹ *Corvus frugilegus pastinator* Gould.

CHAPTER VIII

OVER THE RAPIDS OF THE YA AND DOWN THE MIN AND YANGTSE

As guests of Dr R. L. Crook, we were hospitably entertained, and I received every help, in which his fellow-workers, the Rev. Mr Smith and Mrs Smith, with three lady assistants, joined in their hearty welcome. With Miss L. E. Brodbeck, 'Jhagha'¹ found a haven of rest after her long suffering, endured with a fortitude worthy of all praise. Immediately, she was in danger of being thoroughly spoiled, such a favourite had she become; while whinings, emanating from the other side of the high wall surrounding the neighbouring compounds, denoted her ears were just as ever alert to catch the sound of familiar voices. Although the break had to come, it was better to loosen the ties gradually; when, on licking Edgar's hand, she seemed to anticipate coming events in a premonition of her fate. Symmetrically tan marked on chest and legs, and spotted above her wistful eyes, without a blemish; she was, when the occasion demanded, as she considered, just as ferocious with strangers as gentle with ourselves. Long may she revel with rapture in the intoxicating, mountain air with her devoted mistress whenever a well-earned furlough is required!

Much would have to be accomplished the next three days, but it occurred to me a local photographer was needed, seeing that, with 'Jhagha' as a pure-blood Tibetan, our contingent would be representative of four nationalities; but Ming-sän, not wishing to disgrace me, unfortunately for Aziza and myself, changed into his 'Sunday best' and outclassed us both. Compensating loyalty, both Laoyang and Ming-sän

¹ Communications have reached me from time to time concerning Jhagha's welfare: never was a dog more valued.

wished to go even farther ; and, as for the latter, now badly smitten with the 'wanderlust,' he was ready to see me to my ultimate destination. All that could be promised, however, meant that once Chungking was reached, our leave-taking would have to take place at last, whatever the future had in store.

Discussing with our host the dangers of travel, which at times might seem to be exaggerated, Dr R. L. Crook assured me that he had been fired on. The following morning he beckoned me into his waiting-room at the hospital. Presented for my inspection was a patient, newly arrived, who had miraculously escaped death from a bullet that had obliquely traversed across his back, providentially missing the carotid arteries, as he ducked before his assailant fired. I was informed this incident had happened only a few miles away on a well-travelled route ; this man was fortunate to escape with his life, and what little money he was carrying. Several opium addicts were undergoing treatment, some of whom were shortly to be released, cured of this curse. Spotlessly clean, this hospital catered gratis for all in need of medical attention. If due recognition of the benefits that have been derived from the life efforts of Occidentals, both in service and money, is slow in response, China must some day realize what foreign, disinterested enthusiasts for her welfare, both educationally and medically, have performed in their faith for Christianity. Shortage of time prevented my visiting the prominent building where the Rev. Mr Smith carried on his laudable labours.

Arrangements being completed for a raft to take us as far as Yachou, the two stalwart lads, who had accompanied us from Kochiahopa, helped with our kit to the river-bank. Bidding adieu to my missionary friends and these two worthy sons of the soil, we prepared to make ourselves comfortable for an enjoyable trip over the rapids, sufficiently exciting for the most blasé traveller, when the river now in flood might prove to be a fickle jade, with danger lurking over hidden rocks. It was imperative that no unnecessary delay should occur, as information had reached Yachou that the raft, which had taken the Cunninghams down, had been wrecked, and some of my boxes had, though salvaged, got wet. Giving up our embarkation papers, as not wanted further, before leaving, seemed somewhat odd, particularly as we were

happened from a fast station only a few miles below. It was feared there might be reprisal as we continued on our course; but the rapid current soon forbade all attempt at further explanation, and no untoward incidents of this description happened later.

Constructed entirely of bamboo, these rafts are eminently suitable to take the stress and strain of churning water and hairpin-bends, judiciously and skilfully handled by three men and a youth on this trip. Reaching a wilder stretch of the river, with its sandstone rocks, ponderous in size and diversified in shape, strewn in all directions, in some remote period having been violently deposited when rent asunder, the solitary Black-capped Kingfisher¹ presented a splash of vivid colour as it rose; and the Large Pied Kingfisher² had frequently been flushed, as we raced along outdistancing the foaming water at its own breakneck pace, or peacefully floating on its placid reaches, sometimes broadside on to the current in the quieter water. Having made good progress, we tied up for the night, fortunate not to be undergoing the journey in the reverse direction; considering the toiling relays of trackers, many of whom were physically splendid examples of muscular development, as often as not devoid of the ultra-minimum of attire, the loin-cloth, to be seen straining at the tow-ropes, gaining on the current, foot by foot.

Small parties of diving ducks,³ also regarded as sea ducks, rose at our approach; but of more interest were half a dozen, scattered members of a large Plover⁴ on a gravelly bank. Looking back, an excellent view of the snow mountains about Tachienlu and further commanding mountains to the north were revealed at one or two points from water-level; while hog-backed Wawushan (Washan) and lion-couchant Omeishan (Omisan) displayed their characteristic profiles from various reaches of the river, lower down. Several dug-out canoes were passed, with each pair of fishermen poling a seated string of cormorants to the fishing-grounds. After passing the Rocks of the Thousand Buddhas, with their history lost in antiquity, numerous, artificial caves appeared, perhaps rock-dwellings,

¹ *Halcyon pileata* (Bodd.).

² *Ceryle lugubris guttulata* Stej.

³ *Bucephala clangula clangula* L. The Goldeneye.

⁴ Possibly *Microsarcops cinereus* (Blyth).

or burial sites of a long-lost race, mostly inaccessible on the face of the sandstone bluffs. The raftmen, husbanding their wits and resource of strength, on passing over a reach where beneath the grinding of pebbles was audible with the under-current, Kiating came into view; while to the right, ahead, towered the colossal statue of Maitrêya Buddha, represented as sitting in Occidental fashion, carved out of the solid rock, said to be 180 feet in height,¹ in a recess of 60 feet in depth and width, the work of a devotee in the eighth century of our era which occupied nineteen years of labour. Immediately we were subjected to twisting and corrugating movements under our feet, as the raft sped over a fury of seething water at a sharp angle to the cliffs, hair-raising in excitement; when, on reaching calmer water, we skirted the town above a jutting spit of land and came to shore, crowded with craft in the peaceful Min River.

Apart from wet clothes, of little account, no damage had occurred to specimens. I was delighted to meet once again kind friends who had assisted me so faithfully when, had their raft divided on the submerged rock, all would have been lost. (Having experienced the disastrous outcome of river travel I can perhaps speak with authority.) Some re-adjustment and repacking having been accomplished, and every facility at disposal for my comfort by all generous help from others, the Cunninghams vacated quarters that were open for me, and that same evening saw them take a passage on a junk, continuing their journey to the coast. Planted by Mr Ririe, a pair of Salisburnia,² or ginkgo-trees, stood in his compound, beautiful examples of this tree, with foliage like that of a gigantic, maiden-hair fern, formerly placed in the Coniferæ, a genus which is confined to a single, living representative.

Ready in three days' time to start for Chengtu, the ancient capital of Szechwan, at which place it had been initially decided we might arrive on leaving Muping, but found impracticable; and, as arrangements had been carried out according to my instructions, this journey, combining business

¹ d'Ollone's estimate. Johnston's 386 feet must be a miscalculation. By comparison, the Nelson Monument in Trafalgar Square is just short of 185 feet.

² *Ginkgo biloba*.

with pleasure, had to be undertaken. Rising at 3 a.m., needlessly rousing my hospitable host who refused to let me depart unawares, the rickshaw pullers arrived to time, when Ming-sän and I were swiftly wheeled through the silence of the deserted streets, except for the demure sentry who eyed us askance. Soon however others were out, much too early for little girls—mere children—to start work at the silk factories by five o'clock; when the shrill sirens from two or three hives of this industry announced work had to begin, which seemed the absolute antithesis of conditions in the country through which I had come, so sudden was the transition! Could this be another proof of changing China, where little or no change had been apparent till now?

Advertized to start at an early hour, to be in good time we had taken this precaution, only to find everyone still asleep at the—no, not a caravanserai, I am almost ashamed to say it—garage! Well, walk the one hundred and twenty odd miles¹ I might, and even walk back. There was also the river, which journey might take anything up to a week; or, if preferred, a wheelbarrow for more leisurely travel, to say nothing of the other modes in operation to avoid any attempt at exertion by oneself. Could I be blamed for accepting a lift in a motor-car, which—rumour was current—accomplished the journey within the day. Eventually, tickets were forthcoming, but a proof that the car was unserviceable meant a change of seats to another, now that our full complement of passengers, and more, had arrived, laden with baggage of which each owner had no wish to inconvenience anyone else, but he did. Once started, however, after preliminary halts, warming to it, bumped not only the car but one and all. From this vibration when seated at the back, Ming-sän, who was experiencing his first ride, exhilarating in its novelty, soon found the same inconvenience as myself when lifted a foot off the hard plank; when, somehow, a rebound occurred as the seat rose to meet us on the return.

Palanquins, sedan chairs, and wheelbarrows, slipped behind us; while knots of rustics in consternation held their gaze at this—the latest innovation of a raging, tearing devourer of space—where time-honoured custom almost forbids any approach at hurrying. Half-way there, glad of a respite, we

¹ This journey can now be accomplished by air! (1933).

adjourned to the eating-house within the zone of the usual squalor. As flat as a pancake, the country partook of the monotonous feature of all rice-growing countries in the East, in its ditches of water and expansive greenness of crop. Ducks in droves were undertaking the same journey as ourselves; though it was of no consequence when *they* would arrive, judging by an allowance made in extenuation of their inherent habit. Pigs were less favoured in the loss of time; for which their owners paid the penalty under the strain. Some unruffled, elderly ladies, with sunshade unfurled, comfortably ensconced in wheelbarrows, looked the picture of Nirvana contentment; they appeared to regard time wasted as time gained. Closed palanquins seemed cramped, while I envied other travellers stretched out at ease in open hammocks where affliction or inebriety was not apparent. Suddenly we stopped, when a hurried glance was exchanged between the chauffeurs, of whom one, an understudy, had recently taken his turn at the wheel. (Fortunately for our two selves, after crossing the ferry, to avoid unnecessary anguish to body and mind, we had secured seats forward.) The grating noise, increasing in a whirr of sound like toothed wheels out of gear, defeated all attempts at suppression. On the leading chauffeur jumping out, this was the signal for others to do likewise. Ming-sän, cool in an emergency, looked to me for inspiration, with an inquiring: "Shall I get out?" "Get out!" promptly came in reply—out we got! Not so with a party who had jammed his portly frame in the utterly impossible exit—never so intended—at the rear of the wooden cab (for that was its economical construction), and who was now liable at any moment, if the body of the car did burst, to alight in an undignified posture, if nothing more serious should happen. Our assistance was at his service. It was all the outcome of an insignificant, loose split-pin, but to get one replaced where dirt and grease obliterated all clue to its position was no easy task; Ming-sän, appealing to me once more, suggested that I might do the necessary, seeing that "Chinese always spoil anything foreign". The split-pin was replaced, and Ming-sän promptly regained his seat, though others preferred to walk. When assured that, although "such things did not blow up and kill people", as he thought, there was the likelihood of danger from fire; with this explanation he was

content. Late, but better late than never, we had arrived at our destination—thankful to have escaped the perils of the day: bandits, marauders, robbers, rope-ferries, hanging-platforms, and rapids, surely held no terror as this, my latest adventure!

Having located the Union University with its imposing buildings, spacious and practical in construction, with an orderliness of efficiency and tidiness in its approaches and general lay-out, an object-lesson to the blind, who refuse to profit, I made the acquaintance of Prof. D. Dye, whose guest I was to be. Many had been the exclamations of surprise uttered by Ming-sän; as for the clock-tower, so marvellous a 'watch' was almost past comprehension. Solicitous to emphasize sanitation, I pointed to the drains, free from litter and refuse, with the consequent absence of scavenger dogs; where beyond, sheer ineptitude for generations has resulted in disorder and disease, to be regarded as the inevitable.

Meeting with a universal welcome, I saw much of the religious and social activities where a harmony existed amongst the several Protestant Churches for the prosperity of this remarkable Institution. In my hostess, I found an enthusiastic ornithologist. It was due to her that the Peregrine Falcon, which annually returns to the clock-tower, was pointed out; and, in friendly rivalry, it was fortunate that a gem among the Titmice¹ appeared at this opportune time, as neither of us had as yet seen it in life. Invited by a fellow-entomologist to view his collection, in Mr Frank's cabinet were many large-winged, forestal butterflies,² known in other forms from a wide range of Eastern-Himalayan and Indo-China localities, which refreshed my memory. Taking Ming-sän to the Zoo and Museum was an outing that provided further enlightenment; never realized by him that such an animal as the dromedary had any existence. Shocked to find an arcade painfully Western in appearance, it was not surprising when fashion had decreed bobbed hair, short skirts, and shoes, which in many cases palpably held padded feet. Still, the old order of things remained in the surging multitude. Every com-

¹ *Parus venustulus* Swinh.

² *Stichopthalma howqua* Westw. (Wawushan and Omeishan.)

Stichopthalma neumogeni Leech. (Omeishan.)

modious building, which the military require, is commandeered nowadays ; the massive temple, which we cursorily visited, was no exception, but the officer raised no objection to our entry. As I had the great pleasure of being present at an exhibition of water-colour drawings of local scenes and subjects, shortly after arrival, held by Mrs Morse, it was a further pleasure to meet Dr W. R. Morse, a keen traveller of the by-ways, with whom I attended evening service, rewarded by a lucid and telling discourse.

Early rising as before and taking all risk, I took leave of the kindest of friends, regretful that my host was indisposed, fortified for the journey, both in provision for internal and external comfort in food and cushion. The expected delay materialized ; late as we were, it paled into insignificance on reaching the garage after the river had been recrossed by the ferry-boat. On the arrival of the in-coming car, some attempt was made to discover what car was serviceable of the number lying idle for the want of requisite repairs or spare parts. Seemingly hopeless, a ' chugging ' denoted we had actually started. Of this return journey little need be said, except that the running-boards were soon filled, and for most of the day we were travelling on a flat tire, clearing the gaps in the bridges by our speed where the planks had been intentionally removed. Held up at one quarter, we chivied a buffalo calf which was reluctant to leave us a retreat, further complicated by its mother's actions, when only a miracle saved us from a smash, and the harassed villager was almost reduced to tears. Running into a violent rain-storm, the worst deluge so far experienced, my Pickwickian neighbour, who had joined at an intermediate town, with no room overhead for his umbrella, suffered the continuous drip on his neck, with a geniality worthy of his countenance ; and, when there was every likelihood of our coming to a definite halt at some outlandish village, he added zest to my protest, which had the requisite effect on our chauffeur.

Relieved to arrive at all, Mr Lovegren having returned, I vacated my present quarters where I had been so hospitably treated by Mr and Mrs Ririe, life-long missionaries in China, and took up quarters with the Lovegrens. In the meantime, in request to a cable, I made the journey out to Omeishan, the sacred mountain, where the peculiar bamboo, necessary

for a group-setting of the Giant Panda, obtained by Theodore and Kermit Roosevelt, could only be secured within reasonable distance. Leaving with Mr T. Cook who set the pace, the Ya was crossed some miles above the town, then there followed a subsidiary stream and a crowded ferry-crossing. After traversing the sericulture district, the occasional flagstone-path denoted a well-worn causeway which led under memorial arches, imposing in decorative skill. We passed through *padi*-fields, thronged with buffaloes and ducks, and bamboo-circumscribed villages, until Omeih sien was reached where provisions were obtained in meat and rice. Once clear of its thronged streets, intended at some time to be utilized by motor traffic from Chengtu, the broad road which we were now passing over resembled a quagmire of mud, or a moraine in its loosely scattered stones, no attempt having been made to crush or break these obstacles. In consequence, side-paths were taken up by most of the travellers, which were many, leaving little elbow-room. Beggars, disfigured with the most appalling diseases to which the body is exposed, stood at favourable positions, a revolting spectacle of afflicted humanity.

By the time we had reached Liangfengkang, 2,500 feet, having been on the road twelve hours and covered some thirty odd miles, all of us, my companion included, had had enough. If Aziza and Ming-sän were upset and mutually quarrelsome, my feet had also developed blisters, unaccustomed to the hard and heated flagstones. A night's rest on the veranda put us all in good fettle again, and in the morning a Red-bellied Squirrel¹ was secured; but never was a squirrel once heard to 'chatter' anywhere on my journeying. My cheerful companion, to my regret, had to return after accompanying me to Shihdiensö, 5,400 feet, having halted to inspect the huge bronze elephant at the temple of Wanniensu. As there is a temple every two miles or so, apart from a welcome halt for hot cooked rice, little time had we to spare for Buddhist shrines, which have been exhaustively described elsewhere.

Apart from the Peking Robin² and the Piculet,³ with the rare Laughing-thrush,⁴ birds were difficult to procure from

¹ *Callosciurus erythræus bonhotei* Robins. & Wrough.

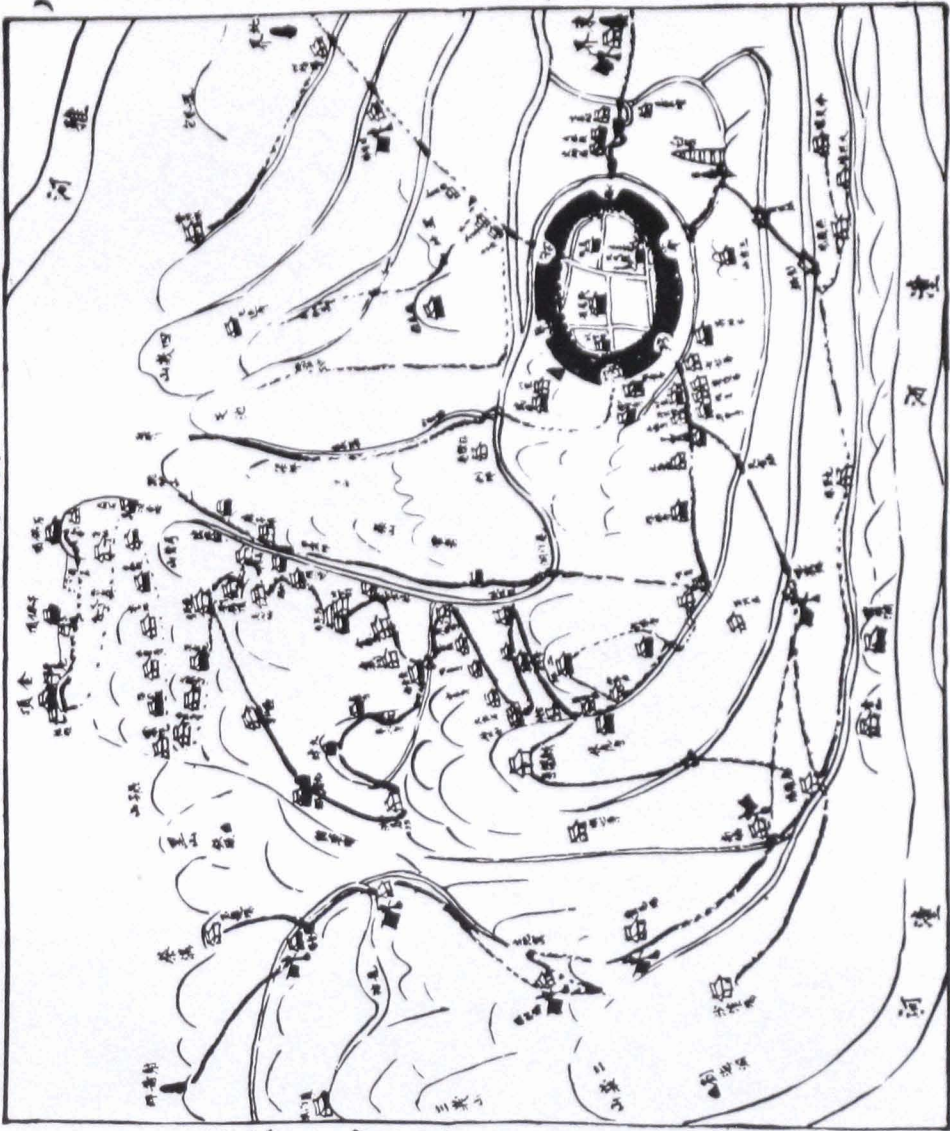
² *Leiothrix lutea lutea* Scop.

³ *Vivia innominatus chinensis* (Harg.). Last obtained at Muli in April.

⁴ *Garrulax ocellata artemisiæ* (Dav.).

四川大英眉山全縣圖 離城十五里

里十二百一城離



離城一百四十五里

里十四城離

PLAN OF THE SACRED MT. OMEISHAN (OMISAN).

the path, composed of hundreds of stone-slab steps, which separated us from the precipices, overgrown with vegetation, deceptive in their abruptness. The Red-tailed Minla¹ appeared in parties at Changlaoping, 5,800 feet, but none was unfortunately obtained. After a stiff climb to 7,400 feet, we were thankful to reach the temple of Shihshahshu, where for five nights I stayed, choosing to have my stretcher within the inner courtyard, which contained two enormous vats, reservoirs into which the rain drained from the four roofs, of which a liberal supply fell during my sojourn. If not altogether sheltered, I was in a position to watch for a break in the leaden sky. A load of the requisite bamboo, lichen, moss, and bark, having been secured, attention was directed to the birds and mammals. With the exception of a small striped Squirrel,² mammals were poorly represented. Hodgson's Speckled Wood Pigeon³ crowded on the trees overlooking the precipice, where more were lost than obtained. On a rubbish-heap, the Chestnut-headed Shortwing,⁴ seen on a former occasion but too near to shoot, was secured; while three species of Laughing-thrushes⁵ amongst other interesting birds⁶ made amends for a paucity in other directions.

Innumerable files of pilgrims, both male and female, came and went throughout each day on their way to and from the summit, 11,000 feet. The weather being unpropitious for an expansive view, I had to be content with a limited survey of 'the eternal snows' from outside my chosen abode, when, nevertheless, I was fortunate at this time of the year; and, at a distance of eighty-five miles, this view was similarly as impressive as the Himalaya Massif from Observatory Hill, Darjeeling, for instance, at one-half the distance. A view that certainly pointed to the Tachienlu Range as stupendous, for an isolated group of mountains. Every allowance must be made, however, for recent snow that had obliterated the summer snow-line. Friendly and hospitable as the priests

¹ *Minla ignotincta jerdoni* Verr.

² *Tamiops swinhoei* M.-Edw.

³ *Columba hodgsoni* Vig.

⁴ *Oligura castaneicoronata* (Burton).

⁵ *Garrulax ellioti ellioti* (Verr.). *Garrulax cineracea cinereiceps* (Styan.).

Garrulax formosa (Verr.).

⁶ *Pomatorhinus ruficollis eidos* ssp. nov. Bangs. *Fulvetta cinereiceps cinereiceps* (Verr.). *Horeites flavolivacea intricatus* Hart. *Certhia familiaris khamensis* Bianchi.

had been, they would have me accept a present of edibles in bamboo-roots, neatly packed in a glass-top box with other simple gifts. Rewarding them in cash and candles, with further trivialities, which they were glad to receive, I took my leave of these kind souls after a stay of four days, having seen nothing of the monkeys,¹ which are said to crowd at favourite resorts on the route, though evidence of solitary individuals had been apparent. Brambles, almost seedless and large in size, usurped much ground, which had been previously forested. Expecting deforestation to have worked its ravages, there was no cause for disappointment, yet the absence of cross-trails was a drawback. Seated on a wooden frame, overlooking the toiling individual below, was an undignified method of defeating the acclivities of the mountain; and it was a method used by not a few who, by their age, might have shown more piety for this pilgrimage on the flat of their own feet. While aged women, with bound feet, intent on accomplishing a good deed, seemed ill-fitted for this arduous task, which must have savoured of a severe penance, and deservedly worthy of reward. Again, temples: as their eldritch and gilded inmates had been my companions during my short residence, they only induced brief stays on our way down. Once more, passing stalls stocked with all the roots and herbs to be used medicinally, arriving at a stave dépôt, all of us made a purchase of these alder staves with Buddha and dragon embellishment.

Before crossing the picturesque, stone arch (remarkably like so many similar structures in width and length of span in stone, recently crossed) which overlooked a miniature gorge of exquisite beauty, where the Brown Dipper² revelled in its cool retreats, we rested once more at Liangfengkang for lunch. Once again arriving on level ground, several labourers were engaged in transporting timber, which, suspended upright on their straight backs, allowed of the one and only method of tardy progression, inch by inch, and this feat must have constituted a record in weight transportation, easily defeating the 400 lb. of the tea-carriers mentioned by

¹ *Macaca mulatta lasiotus* Gray.

² *Cinclus pallasii souliei* Oust.

The following butterflies were obtained on this trip: *Colias hyale polio-graphus* Motsch. *Junonia almana* L. *Zizera mahe opalina* Pouj. *Ampittia maro virgata* Leech. October 10. Also the humble-bee moth *Macroglossum bombylans* Bsd. obtained on October 9, and previously at Liangfengkang on October 4.

E. Colborne Baber. When Aziza was so astonished to remark that : " Five maunds of a load for a human carrier beat even the record for Kashmir ! " We had difficulty on reaching Omeih sien in locating our quarters, as a fire some time previously had gutted a lot of property, and with it, a goodly portion of the Mission. Surprised to find my friend Cook, who had returned, and who was now on his way to the Lolo country where he trusted to gain entrance, our friendship was renewed for the night. Each of us went his separate way in the morning. Except for meeting with the Fantail Warbler,¹ and a party of the Red-billed Long-tailed Pie * (last collected at Muli in April) near a town, unmarked on the maps ; whence, taking a junk on the Tung Ho, the remaining distance to Kiating was accomplished with no further incident, and all of us were happy to shorten our exertions.

During the next two days, every help was given to me by Mr Lovegren in bartering and picking out specimens of the various peculiar fish for sale in the market, when a remarkably fine specimen of the Giant Salamander * was obtained. Arrangements were made for a junk to take us to Sui city ; and, bidding farewell, I embarked on the night of October 12. Progress on the Min River was both pleasant and relaxing ; having chartered the junk for ourselves, we were under no obligation to accept further travellers, who came out from the bank to meet us, anticipating a passage. After the first lot had been accommodated, to prevent a crowded boat, which would have meant a further inroad of water, with consequent peril to my collections and everyone else, others had to be refused. Arriving on the evening of the second day at Suifu, situated at the meeting of the Min and Yangtse, we ascended the bank through all the mud and freight associated with river ports in China, entering by one of the massive arches ; further inconvenience was apparent in the general uplifting of its main streets, where one and all alike were in process of replacement by a modern surface that, however, seemed very remote in accomplishment. The good citizens of London complain of this inconvenience essential to necessary operations

¹ *Cisticola juncidis tintinnabulans* (Swinh.).

² *Urocissa erythrorhyncha erythrorhyncha* (Bodd.).

³ *Cryptobranchus japonicus* Temm. From 35 to 44 inches in length when full grown. Nowhere abundant and confined to several parts of the Japanese mainland as well as Western Central China.

in their beloved metropolis ; what an education in patience it would be, to have a look at method, or want of method, here.

Nevertheless we did arrive at Dr David Graham's residence, and never was I received with a warmer welcome than by this ' kindred spirit '. Scouring the country on both banks of the Min River and in the vicinity of the city on the left bank of the Yangtse, high and low ground was equally worked, adding many birds new to me, including a small series of two, exclusively Chinese, Finches,¹ and specimens of a dainty Flycatcher Warbler ;² while reptiles, fish, and insects,³ were not neglected, adding considerably to my numerous packages. Sanitation was appalling in its absence, to the extent that a corpse would be left outside the city gate over which a bamboo mat had been crudely placed. Stacked on the fore-deck of a Chinese river-steamer, belonging to a Company which proceeds farther into the interior than the foreign-owned similar vessels, a load of antlers, the production of Tibet, to be utilized for medicinal purposes as an aphrodisiac, savoured of wholesale extermination when thought is given to the annual exportation. All my personal belongings and effects were transhipped to another junk on the afternoon of October 18, after a temporary hold-up by the combative element, representatives of the tyranny of aggressive combination, on a futile plea which lacked merit. Agreeable to pay additional charges, although my fellow-countryman, Mr. C. F. Gould, had chartered the junk, and he was strictly entitled to use it as he pleased, no further protest was raised to my accompanying him. To this friend I am indebted for considerable help in assisting me with numerous formalities at Chungking, which lightened my anxious time later on. Although we made a good passage, the weather turned cold, and with rain, without exercise, further discomfort ensued. Being overtaken by the junk in which the British Vice-Consul was a passenger, we were able to obtain contact to our benefit at the evenings' landing-places.

However, owing to a demand by rifle fire to enter a tax-

¹ *Chloris sinica sinica*. (L.) *Eophona migratoria sowerbyi* Riley.

² *Abroscopus albigularis fulvifascies* (Swinh.).

³ *Terias hecabe mandarina* Orza. *Colias hyale poliographus* Motsch. *Lethe rohria* Fab. *Lethe chandica caelestis* Leech. *Melanitis mineus confucius* Leech. *Melanitis leda ismene* Cr. *Argynnis childreni caesarea* Fruhst. *Zizera make opalina* Pouj.

station above our destination, Chungking was not reached until the morning of October 22. Ludicrous perhaps, a fine of 60 cents settled an episode which showed the expenditure of two cartridges, and little cause had the officer for working himself into a fury when our passes were in order, signed by the General in Suifu. Ready, some subordinates had been, to unload our effects for examination. At Chungking I could not have been welcomed with more cordiality and hospitality by the naval and civilian residents, American and British, whose guest in turn I was. Well might each nation be proud of its Naval Service, and Consular Service, in the unenviable task of keeping the peace. Greeting the surgeon with a "just come through from Burma", I was now in the social atmosphere of His Majesty's gunboat *Gannet*. If my topi did suffer from my carelessness and unacquaintance with the ephemeral cigarette, it had right well served its purpose. Amusingly requested for a decision as an ornithologist, I vetoed the artist's endeavour in that the bill of the bird as represented by their crest ought *not* to be black!

Retaining the junk without unloading, at the wharf once again, all my belongings were transferred later directly on to the fore-deck of the s.s. *Wantung* during the evening of October 24, to much protest from would-be obstructionists. If willing helpers were at hand among the ship's officers, the captain did not view my treasures with equanimity, fearing that his ship would be held up at Wanhsien on my account. Prepared to act as he suggested, there might be a chance of 'squaring' any difficulties that certainly would have to be avoided. In 'the Wanhsien incident' this ship had figured, and the chief officer, having been a victim and eye-witness of all that happened on that occasion, informed me lucidly of his experience. Although my journey took me through scenery, grander by far, mere words can do no justice to these Gorges of the Yangtse, which extend from Kweichow to the approach of Ichang, five in number, and cover a stretch of one hundred and fifty miles. It will suffice to say, imposing and savage in perpendicular wall of rock and sinister depth of water, aptly described in Western America as canyons, no other similar phenomenon, so accessible,¹ can compare with them in magnitude and consequent impressiveness; while the rock-groovings at one

¹ Also accessible by air (1933) !

quarter are exceptionally characteristic and prominent. Wash from our boat caused a mishap to a native craft that had ventured too near to our restricted course, not to be deviated without incurring grave risk of a serious disaster; but it was gratifying to observe that the occupant, who had left his craft to secure jettisoned cargo, accomplished his feat successfully. In red attire, sentinels, posted in prominent positions, looked after the safety of passing craft; but armed figures in medieval costume eluded identification. Fortunately for me every official, authorized and unauthorized, at Wanhsien had his hands full, as four steamships had come to anchor on the evening of the next day. By settling the limited demands, an anxious spell was ended. Neither had a guard of British bluejackets, reinstated for the first occasion to reply to any sporadic firing from the banks; for which every precaution had been taken to ensure our safe passage. Ichang, which was reached on the evening of October 26, was not left until five days later, no further intermediate connection being scheduled.

A survey of the occupants in many small boats proved that the anti-leagues were interested in everyone else's business, when automatic pistols were much in evidence. For a display of these highly dangerous weapons in the hands of mere youths, the military at Kiating can be commended as the worst offenders; while it was no unusual sight to see a pistol withdrawn from the folds of capacious trousers by a loud-voiced spokesman, close to the ship, where two, equally boisterous youths were engaged spitting in each other's face; and where a miserable youth, in the custody of two soldiers, protested his innocence because, if opium had been traced to him, there were no further supplies secreted about his person. These were the everyday sights alongside. In due course, an anti-opium contingent inflicted their presence on me. Being acquainted with the Oriental mind, which itches to become a nuisance, to see what effect is produced on an Occidental, I failed to bite the bait; if my tins had been pierced without by your leave, on showing these obnoxious and unauthorized hooligans that my locked trunks contained nothing of the coveted drug, the tension was relieved without further ado. Small wonder nowadays that the legal methods employed by the Customs fail to reap their quota, which was

formerly, promptly confiscated and destroyed, when these so-called patriots have an eye to creating 'a ring' in this valuable drug. Notwithstanding the searching of both sections of these departments, apart from the escape of the tell-tale fumes, bound in rot-proof canvas, a package may be seen now and then cast overboard when a junk is at hand, ready to pick up the consignment.

The well-equipped s.s. *Chang Sha* arrived at Hankow November 2; though there had been low water at one or two shoals, which we scraped. Thousands of ducks and large gaggles of geese had been observed at various stretches on the river; but what interested me most were the little groups of the Mandarin,¹ mainly males, above and below Shaze. Further telegrams and cables were despatched in anticipation of my arrival in Shanghai. Receiving every help from the American Consul-General, I could offer no other explanation of the canard that the British intended invading China viâ Tibet; if, indeed, they had not already done so, which was credited to anti-British propagandists in Shanghai, than that it must have emanated from students who had reached Nanking from Tachienlu. No doubt Aziza, regarded as a Bolshevik then, had assumed another guise to meet this alteration; when, for an army to traverse a similar stretch of country to that through which we had come, it showed a lamentable ignorance of their own borders, as students of professed intelligence they assumed. Much activity was apparent among the troops, and many were the freighters that brought contingents of men and horses. A lavish display of bunting and frequent salvos of gunfire announced an international courtesy from the numerous gunboats, lying at anchor. Leaving by the s.s. *Ngankin*, November 4, with a captain of that fine type in the mercantile marine who sees things through, good, bad, or indifferent, a pleasant trip brought us to Kiukiang where, in the market of this turbulent town, unusually quiet, I last put foot on 'Old China', longing for any receptacle to hold the innumerable fish and crustaceans, where baskets were heaped with wild ducks and geese, on which my back had finally to be turned. After passing two prominent, Gibraltar-like eminences, frequented by cormorants; on a strip of green turf,

¹ *Aix galericulata* (L.).

an 'old cock' ring-necked pheasant¹ surveyed me at his leisure, defiant in his security.

Kind friends met me on landing at Shanghai, November 6. With all my papers in order, my anxious time was ended. Regretful, yet resigned—back again in the whirl of life—should my feelings even be like those on an emergence from a trance. The energetic, stalwart constable of my own race, wielding his knout, looked the genuine representative of the Arm of the Law; I have little doubt that Aziza quickly made the acquaintance of some of his erect, bearded countrymen. As the whereabouts of my clothes and necessaries for the passage home were unknown, I sailed the next day, with what I possessed, arriving to time in Chicago; but too late to take advantage of Kermit Roosevelt's humorous utterance, "that he would have laid almost any odds against my appearance on time", when met by Suydam Cutting and him I was received with open arms. Let it suffice to record that Aziza reached his "fair Kashmir"; while Ming-sän's letter, notifying me of his safe arrival, did not reach me until June 23, 1930. My trunks, which had been following me by river, sea, and land, having been delivered to me the previous week, over seven months after my arrival home.

¹ Possibly *Phasianus colchicus torquatus* Gmel.

CONCLUSION

THIS journey took me through the humid, luxuriant, virgin forest of Upper Burma, across the Great Divides in Yunnan to the broad expanse of rolling downs on the outer fringe of the Tibetan plateau in Szechwan—through the most inaccessible and outlying region of the two largest provinces in 'the Middle Kingdom', which was traversed from west to east in its entire breadth—through a stretch of country for diversity of surface and picturesque beauty, assuredly unrivalled on the face of the earth. Imperfectly and inadequately described as oppressive, terrifying, or inspiring, as the scene in the Grandeur and Sublimity of Mountain, Valley, River, expansive Downs, and extensive Forest, was accordingly revealed in Nature's multitudinous and ever-changing mood.

My experiences were intensely interesting and extremely varied, both perplexing and amusing. If my journey was devoid of 'blood-curdling' adventure, as no pack-animal was lost, it was not without moments of anxiety when the Fates decreed. To the traveller possessed of a sound constitution, good digestion, equable temperament, and an indifference to the inevitable, such a journey offers no terrors. Though, on occasions, this will demand a stomach like an ostrich, patience like Job manifold, a stoicism with essential tact to counteract the most blatant obstructiveness, sufficient gumption to outwit the most specious subterfuge, the right decision after due consideration, and above everything else, endurance. Only those prepared to meet these emergencies can enjoy the boundless pleasure of strenuous travel. Whatever should be the trials, the sunshine will banish the shadows, and with accomplishment on retrospection comes the satisfaction of "something attempted, something done".

Distracted by self-seeking puppets, rent by civil war, China is ever in a turmoil, and from the prevalent lawlessness there seems no relief. Truly, it is not for the first time such a state of affairs has prevailed; but, nowadays, the baneful causes at work are more difficult to unravel. In common with other nations where discontent has gone hand in hand with a rate of progress, accelerated to such a pitch, not to be so readily assimilated without loss in stability, lethargic China has not escaped this clutch of unrest, wide in extent, which, not in China alone, is confined to an intriguing minority. Those who, in an impetuosity to hasten their Millennium, having acquired a superficial Western outlook and consequential shallow ideality, disappointed at the frustration of their aim, in the slow response from the masses,—ever suspicious lest the last stage should be worse than the first—, retaliate on the benevolent source whence this outlook is derived. Hence appear in endless repetition, Imperialism, Extraterritoriality, with other bugbears, real or imaginary; all of which are subject to distortion of fact, but afford the ready means in an outlet for this dissatisfaction. To be expected, the tyranny of a minority (strongly represented by the pleader and usurer *outside* of China), who would preferably begin where their grandfathers did end, has resulted in abuses and disorder due to the rise and fall of war lords, concerned in self-aggrandizement, and a militarism beloved of the lawless, which is a burden to the law-abiding and peaceful masses, further oppressed by extortionate taxation. Unfortunately for the people in the extreme west, as the outcome of unstable government, they suffer from the depredations of their own kith and kin; but they are compensated in situation, by being beyond the main zone of China's unrest.

Long live the Land of the Lamas! May no modern inventions ever encroach to disturb the serenity and repose of your land of mysticism; for with the advent of roads come the noise of the motor-horn and the ugliness of the petrol-pump and—'Speed', clamouring for the model road—and in their wake, who knows: all manner of unsightly abominations in the name of Progress. Is it also too much to expect, at least one place on God's earth will be left in Peace from 'the destructive grasp' of a base commercialism. If assured,

then would I say: Land of the Lamas! What does it matter about your appalling 'delicacies' and 'odours of the unwashed.' I love you all the more. Beware! lest fleeting pleasures beyond your ken should gain admittance, to usurp contemplation and destroy your happiness.

ITINERARY

ITINERARY

1928	<i>Halt</i>	<i>Altitude</i>		
December 21-25	Bhamo	385 ft		
26	Little Bhamo	—		
27	Khalongka	—		
28	Nawphra Yang	—		
29	Manhsien	—		
30	Hsiahsinkai	—		
31	Kanai	—		
1929				
January	1 Nantien	3,400		
	2 Hsiao Hoti	—		
	3-5 Tengyueh	5,666	Intermediate col	8,000
	6 Kanlanchai	5,000		
	7 Taipingpu	8,000		
	8 Taogaiba	2,900	Intermediate col	4,800
	9 ?	5,800	Intermediate col	8,000
	10 Yungchangfu	5,500	Intermediate col	7,800
	11 ?	—		
	12 Shuichai	—		
	13 ?	5,400		
	14 ?	—		
	15 Camp	5,700	col	8,500
	16 ?	—		
	17 Hamlet above Yangpi	—	Intermediate col	8,500
	18 Mingshih	—	Intermediate col	7,700
	19 Talifu	6,700		
	20 Tengchuanchou	7,000		
	21 Niukai	7,100		
	22 Tienwei	7,500		
	23 Paochiao	7,700		
	24-27 Likiang	8,200		
28-Mar.	7 Ngulukô	9,000		
March	8 Camp	9,000		
	9 Camp	10,000		

THROUGH DEEP DEFILES

1929		<i>Halt</i>	<i>Altitude</i>			
March	10	Camp	10,700 ft.			
	11	Yensolauko	10,600			
	12	Lotsolu Camp	10,500			
	13	Fengkou Camp	6,400	Yangtse level	5,100	
	14	Lakashili	5,400			
	15	Aowah Camp	8,800	col	9,000	
				Intermediate col	11,500	
	16-22	Yungning	8,600			
	23	Jhayshuitha Camp	9,500			
	24	Gudgzo Camp	10,300			
	25	Camp	12,000	Intermediate col	14,200	
	26	Camp	10,000			
	27-Apr. 8	Camp	8,850			
	April	9	Muli	—		
		10	Camp above Litiang	8,900	col	11,200
		11	Camp	9,150	col	13,200
April	12-22	Kulu	12,100			
	23	Itze Camp	11,600	highest point	14,400	
	24	Camp	14,300	Kon La " "	14,600	
	25	Saghi Camp	12,500			
	26	Zumpa Camp	14,000	Yonka La	15,000	
	27-28	Tiyu	12,950	highest point	14,300	
	29	Yatsu Camp	11,200	" "	13,500	
	30	? above Yalung	9,000	river level	7,500	
	May	1-7	Baurong	8,100		
		8	Pathay	11,750	col	15,300
9		Camp	13,950	highest point	15,000	
10-25		Wushi	12,000	" "	15,000	
				lowest point	12,700	
26-27		Chiti Camp	13,550	col	15,600	
28		Chentze Camp	13,150			
29		Layla midday	12,400			
29		Chauloo Camp	13,600	lowest point	12,100	
30		Tauzyeu Camp	13,600			
31		Zambaku	11,600			
June		1	Trazyea midday	12,100		
	1	Hadjatungu Camp	13,000	Haja La	15,300	
	2	Patya Camp	13,200			
	3	Cheto midday	12,000			
	3-9	Tachienlu	9,150	(8,400 according to map too low !)		
	10-14	Cheto	—			
	15-23	Tachienlu	—			
	24-July 7	Wali above Ulongkong	—	Yajajen La	14,500	

ITINERARY

237

1929	<i>Halt</i>	<i>Altitude</i>		
July	8-12 Tachienlu	—		
	13 Camp	13,000 ft.	Cheto La	15,000
	14 Anyangpa Camp	12,950		
	15 Yingkuanchai Camp	12,450		
	16 Tongolo Camp	12,500		
	17 Camp (Pehsang, midday)	12,550		
	18 Tschmengka Camp	12,725		
	19 Hlagong, midday	13,300		
	19-22 Camp	13,500	highest point	13,700
	23 Pamei lower, camp	12,300		
	24-25 Tailing camp	12,600		
	26 Camp	13,000		
	27-28 Kwanchai Camp	13,700		
	29-30 Camp	13,500		
	31 Camp	12,450		
August	1-2 Tailing Camp	—	col	14,100
	3 Camp	13,000		
	4 Camp	15,000		
	5 Sientientze, midday	12,700		
	5 Tsongku	11,300		
	6-15 Tachienlu	—		
	16 Zuthi	6,900		
	17 Wassakoe, midday	5,300		
	17 Kutsa Gomba	5,825		
	18 Chingshui	6,000	highest point	8,400
	19 Meipong	7,900	highest point	10,800
	20 Camp	10,100	lowest point	7,000
	21 Tienta, midday	9,000		
	21 Hamlet (later)	7,375		
	21-22 Kochaihopa	7,500		
	23 Trashichoten	8,350		
	24 Shuangyue, midday	8,900		
	24 Tongling	8,875		
	25 Camp	9,850		
	26 Midday halt	10,400		
	26 Santaochai, camp	11,550		
	27 Lianghokow, midday	12,200		
	27 Camp	11,000	highest point	13,100
28-Sept.	9 Tupakö, Camp	7,400		
September	10 Louyingkô, Camp	6,525		
	11 Pashkü Camp	5,425		
	12 Moahten Camp	4,375		
	13-15 Muping	4,100	highest point	4,500
	16 Lingquang	3,300	" "	4,500

1929	<i>Halt</i>	<i>Altitude</i>
September 17	Renjaba	2,900 ft.
18	Lushan, midday	—
18	Feih sien	2,600
19-22	Yachou	2,500
23	River bank	—
24	River bank	—
25-27	Kiatingfu	1,100
28-29	Chengtufu	—
30-Oct. 2	Kiatingfu	—
October 3	Liangfengkang	2,500
4	Shihdiensö	5,400
4	Wanniensi	—
4	Changlaoping	5,800
4-8	Shihshahshu	7,400
9	Omeih sien	
10-11	Kiatingfu	
12-13	River bank	
14-19	Suifu	800
20	River bank	
21	River bank	
22-24	Chungking	
25	Wanhsien	
26	Ichang	
November 2	Hankow	
6	Shanghai	

INDEX

INDEX

- Abbot, Yungning, 52, 67
Amadeus, lake, 123
American Consul-General, 227
American Naval and Consular Services, 225
Amundsen, Mr Edward, 90
Andrews, Mr and Mrs, 38, 46
Andrews, Dr and Mrs, 122, 126, 174
Anyangpa, hamlet, 136
Aowah, hamlet, 51
Apso, Tibetan, 70
Assam, 5, 6, 192
Atuntzü, 126
Aziza, Kashmiri servant, 17, 18, 20, 21, 22, 24, 26, 27, 28,
30, 31, 34, 45, 51, 54, 56, 62, 64, 66, 67, 73, 84, 86, 95, 98,
99, 100, 101, 105, 109, 115, 116, 120, 125, 129, 147, 162,
163, 167, 182, 185, 189, 193, 195, 198, 199, 203, 204, 206,
208, 210, 212, 220, 223, 227, 228
- Baber, E. Colborne, 223
Bailey, Colonel F. M., 2, 134
Ba Meutze (Miao-tzu), 82
Batang, 122, 126, 135, 139, 160, 168
Baurong, village, 85, 86, 88, 90, 104, 128, 196
Bhamo, 5, 11, 12, 14, 49, 53
' Billy ' mascot, 80, 87, 97, 100, 105
Bo-Kunka, mountain, 143
Bonin, Mons, C. E., 90
British Naval and Consular Services, 225

- British Vice-Consul, 224
 Bretschneider, map, 143
 Brodbeck, Miss L. E., 212
 Brooke, Lieut. J. W., 183
 Buddha, Living, 170
 Buddha Maitrêya, statue, 215
 Buddhas, rocks of the thousand, 214
- Calcutta, 209
 Chala, 90
 Changlaoping, 221
Chang, Sha, s.s., 227
 Charrier, Père, 122, 174
 Chaulu, 111
 Chengtu, 173, 215, 220
 Chentze, 109
 Che Ri La, 90
 Cheto, 90, 119, 124, 126, 134, 140, 150. Pass, 125
 Chicago, 228
 China Inland Mission, 34
 Chingshui, 179
 Chiti, 107
 Chuilung, 95, 100, 106
 Chungking, 213, 224, 225
 Cook, Mr T., 220, 223
 Cooper, Mr T. T., 5, 180
 Crook, Dr R. L., 212, 213
 Cunningham, Mr and Mrs R., 104, 120, 123, 124, 126, 134,
 164, 170, 174, 213, 215
 Cutting, C. Suydam, 5, 12, 14, 16, 90, 228
- Dabo Pass, 167
 Dalai Lama, 46, 137, 165

Dan Leno, 43
Darjeeling, 46, 221
David, Abbé, 173
Dawo, 158, 163
Derby, Lord, 23
Derge, 172
D'Orleans, Prince Henri, 6
Doublet, Père, 164
Duncan, Mr and Mrs, 126
Dye, Prof. and Mrs D., 218
Dza Ri, Kú, 90

Edgar, Mr J. Huston, 123, 134, 147, 149, 153, 160, 163, 169,
174, 189, 210, 212
Erh Hai, 34

Feih sien, 210
Fengkou, 50
Field, Mr Stanley, 2
Forrest, Mr George, 38
Frank, Mr, 218

Gannet, H.M.S., 225
Giant Panda, 173, 197, 198, 220
Gi La, 125 (Cheto Pass)
Gile's Dictionary, 160
Gill, Captain, 142
Ginalakö, 46
Girandea, Bishop, 122
Gould, Mr C. F., 224
Government Salt Dept., 23
Graham, Dr David, 224

Haitzeshan Pass, 166

Haja La, 90, 117, 124, 125, 137

Hajatungu, 115

Hankow, 227

Hanna, Mr and Mrs W. J., 34

Hlagong, 142, 143

Hsiakuan, 34

Hsiang Cheng, 104

Hsifan, 82

Ichang, 225, 226

Irrawaddy, river, 6 ; defiles, 11

Itze, 73, 77

Jeschke, Tibetan Dictionary, 160

Jhagha, Tibetan collie, 135, 146, 147, 154, 164, 169, 174,
179, 181, 182, 184, 186, 190, 195, 197, 198, 200, 201, 202,
212

Jhara, 138, 142, 143, 148, 150, 154, 166, 167

Jhayshuitha, 55

Johnston, Mr R. F. (Sir Reginald), 5, 90

Kachins, 13

Kanai, Saw Bwa, 16

Kanlanchai, 18

Kanze, 158

Kashmir, 223, 228

Kashmiri, 11, 26, 189, 204

Katha, 12

Kelley, the late Mr William V., 2

Kelley-Roosevelt Expedition, 2, 6

- Kiating, 143, 215, 223, 226
 Kienchwan, 37
 King Thibaw, palace, 11
 Kiukiang, 227
 Kochaihopa, 173, 182, 186, 194, 201, 213
 Kon, La, 76
 Kopadi, 64, 67
 Kulu, 59, 65, 67, 73, 80
 Kunka (Minya Gonka), 143
 Kusata, 109
 Kutsa, 178
 Kwanchai, 155, 164, 166
 Kweichow, 225
- Lakashili, 50, 55, 105
 Lanepa, 96
 Laofang, 174, 182, 187, 188, 198
 Laosang, 134, 135, 136, 147, 153, 163, 175
 Laoyang, primus, 51, 74, 134, 135, 147, 153, 162, 163, 164,
 171, 183, 187, 189, 212
 Laoyang, secundus, 175, 183, 184, 198
 Lashipa, 38
 Latakhü, lake, 52
 Layla, 111
 Leningrad, museum, 160
 Lhasa-Batang, route, 119
 Liangfengkang, 220, 222
 Lianghokow, 193, 210
 Li chu, 113
 Lidjazah, 55
 Likiang, 38, 39, 45, 53, 64, 80, 119, 201
 Likiang, range, 58, 74
 Lingquang, 206, 210
 Litang, 63, 85
 Lolo, 33, 55, 56, 131, 223

- Lotsolu, 49
 Louyingkö, 200
 Lovegren, Mr and Mrs, 219, 223
 Lu, river, 177
 Lushan, 209
- Ma, General, 132
 McNeill, Capt. Malcolm, 183
 Mandalay, 11
 Meipong, magistrate, 180 ; village, 174, 181, 183
 Mekong, river, 6, 27, 32
 Milne-Edwards, 173
 Min, river, 215, 223, 224
 Minchia, 33
 Ming-sän, 45, 46, 54, 62, 66, 71, 73, 75, 86, 87, 88, 89, 96,
 104, 105, 125, 129, 136, 139, 140, 141, 143, 144, 148, 150,
 155, 161, 166, 170, 175, 199, 204, 210, 212, 216, 217, 218,
 220, 228
 Minya Gonka, mountain, 131, 137, 138, 153, 154
 Mingshih, village, 32
 Mitchell, Mr M., 183
 Moahten, hamlet, 202
 Morse, Dr R. W. and Mrs, 219
 Moshemien, 131
 Mongong, village, 174, 193
 Mount Gibboh, 57
 Muli, king of, 44, 59, 62, 65, 66, 67, 70, 71, 72, 80, 85
 Muli, lamasery, 58, 63, 70, 85, 156, 223
 Muping, 173, 182, 184, 186, 189, 194, 196, 199, 203, 208,
 210, 215
- Nak-chu (Yalung), 90
 Nanking, 170, 227
 Nantien, 17

Nashi, women, 39 ; boys, 39, 45, 46, 55, 62, 64, 66, 73, 79,
104, 105, 110, 113, 117, 119, 123, 129, 138, 151, 158, 164,
165, 169, 174, 198, 199, 204

Nepal, 44, 108

Ngankin, s.s., 227

Ngulukö (Moso), village, 39, 55, 84

Niukai, 36

Northumberland, peel towers, 91

Nyorophu, islet of, 52

Old Kanai, village, 16

Omeishan (Omisan), Mt Omei, 53, 185, 214, 219

Omeihsien, town, 220, 223

Paochiao, 38

Pamei, hamlet, 135, 150

Paris, museum, 173

Pashkü, hamlet, 201

Pathay, hamlet, 97

Patya, camp, 118

Pehsang, hamlet, 140

Peking, 160, 173

Przewalski, 159

Rangoon, 11

Red river, 33

Renjaba, 209

Ririe, Mr and Mrs, 215, 219

Rombatza, 172

Rong chu, 58

Roosevelt, the late President Theodore, 43

Roosevelt, Theodore, 5, 12, 14, 16, 31, 37, 90, 220

Roosevelt, Kermit, 5, 12, 13, 14, 16, 69, 90, 199, 220, 228

Sadiya, 5
 Salween, river, 6, 20
 Santaochai, 193
 Saghi, hamlet, 77
 Satsetö, mountain, 38, 39
 Second Defile, Irrawaddy, 12
 Shanghai, 160, 227, 228
 Shangkuan, village, 35
 Shan village, 15
 Shaze, 227
 Shelton, Dr, 46
 Shihdiensö, hamlet, 220
 Shihshahshu, temple, 221
 Shola Gonka, mountain, 72
 Shuangyeu, hamlet, 188
 Shwe Dagon, pagoda, 11
 Shweli, river, 18
 Simms, Mr Stephen C., 2
 Sintientze, hamlet, 167
 Sikkim, 39, 108, 135
 Singapore, 209
 Smith, Rev. Mr and Mrs, 212, 213
 Suifu, 223, 225
 Sowerby, *Journal of Science and Arts*, 160
 Stötzner, expedition, 158
 Szechenyi, Count, Expedition, 143
 Szechwan, 6, 56, 61, 108, 170, 215, 229
 Switzerland, 202

Tachienlu, 5, 17, 39, 42, 46, 54, 79, 89, 90, 105, 119, 122, 124
 126, 131, 134, 136, 138, 140, 144, 145, 147, 164, 165, 168
 170, 172, 175, 183, 186, 203, 214, 221, 227
 Takin (Budorcas), 57, 183, 189, 192
 Tailing, 148, 152, 154, 162, 163, 164
 Taipingpu, 19

Talifu, 27, 30, 34, 90
Tao, Mr Philip, 16
Taping, river, 14
Tauzyeu, 112
Tengchwan, 35
Tengyueh, 21, 25, 30, 31, 82
Tienwei, 37
Tienta, 185
Tientsien, 160
Tiyu, 81
Tongling, 189
Tongolo, 139
Tonkin, 33
Trashichoten, 188
Trazia, 115
Tsao, Chinese servant, 36, 37, 38
Tschmengka, 142
Tsekou, 38
Tsongku, 167
Tung, Gorge, 91, 93 ; Ho, 177, 183, 185, 223
Tupakö, 195

Ulongkong, 90, 127, 170
Union University, 218

Valentin, Père, 122
Vice-abbot, Yungning, 52

Wali, 127, 130, 132
Wanhsien, 225, 226
Wanniensu, 220

Wantung, s.s., 225

Waszakou, 177

Wawushan (Washan), 214

Weigold, Dr H., 134, 158, 160

Wilkinson, Mr H. M., 18

Wilson, Mr E. H., 134

Wushi, 89, 99, 107, 109, 115, 132, 144, 157, 160

Ya, river, 211, 220

Yachou, 120, 122, 172, 210, 211, 213

Yajajen, pass, 129

Yalung, canyon, 84, 97 ; river, 90, 96, 98, 104

Yangpi, 30

Yangtse Big Bend, 47

Yangtse Kiang, 6, 27, 50, 55, 59, 105, 152, 223, 224, 225

Yatsu, hamlet, 83, 85

Yeutong, 174, 182, 183

Yingkuanchai, 137

Yonka, La, 80, 81

Yorkshire Dales, 101

Young, Mr J. T., 5, 11, 15, 16, 17, 35, 90

Yungning, 42, 46, 117, 188 ; plain, 51, 52, 136

Yungchangfu, 21, 22

Yunnanfu, 105, 121

Yunnan, province, 6, 25, 30, 42, 64, 84, 126, 229

Zambaku, 90, 114

Zumpa, 79

Zuthi, 175

